i GRAMMAR i

Sentence (বাক্য) 1

আমরা ছবিটিতে দেখতে পাি” ছ কিছু Word পাশাপাশি বসানো হয়েছে। কিন্তু কোনো ভাব প্রকাশ পায়নি। কিন্তু উপরে সেই শব্দগুলোই যদি এভাবে সাজিয়ে লেখা যায়; The boy is crying, Rimu likes painting, Who is shouting তখন তারা প্রত্যেকটি আলাদা আলাদা ভাব প্রকাশ করে।



এভাবে, **এক বা একাধিক শব্দ পাশাপাশি বসে যখন পরিষ্কার অর্থ প্রকাশ করে তখন তাকে Sentence (বাক্য) বলে।**

- প্রতিটি Sentence এর প্রথম Letter টি Capital হবে।

Parts of a Sentence (বাক্যের অংশ)

Sentence বা বাক্যের দুটি অংশ থাকে–

(i) Subject (উদ্দেশ্য)
(ii) Predicate (বিধেয়)

নিম্নে এদের সংজ্ঞাসহ উদাহরণ দেওয়া হল :

(i) Subject (উদ্দেশ্য) : যে ব্যক্তি বা বস্তু সম• র্কে বলা হয় তাকে Subject বলে। যেমন :

Tareq loves swimming.
↓
Subject

(ii) Predicate (বিধেয়) : Subject সম• র্কে যাহা বলা বা লেখা হয় তাকে Predicate বলে। যেমন :

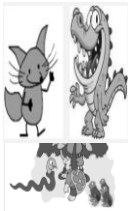
Tareq loves swimming.
↓
Predicate

এবার নিচের বাক্যগুলো লক্ষ কর :

Subject	*Predicate*
Kona (কনা)	makes basket. (ঝুড়ি তৈরি করে।)
They (তারা)	are laughing. (হাসছে।)
She (সে)	comes first in her class. (সে তার শ্রেণিতে প্রথম হয়।)

প্রথম বাক্যটিতে কনা সম্বন্ধে বলা হ” ছ। তাই Kona হল Subject। আবার কনা সম্বন্ধে যা বলা হ” ছ তা হল ‘makes basket’। তাই ‘makes basket’ হ” ছ Predicate।

Types of Sentences (ev‡K¨i cÖKvi ‡f`)



Crocodile : Mr. Fox, I want your help.
Fox : How can I help you?
Crocodile : I want you to teach my kids.
Fox : What a nice idea! Send them right now.

কথোপকথনে দেখতে পাই Crocodile ও Fox কথা বলার সময় বিভিন্ন ধরনের বাক্য ব্যবহার করেছে। কখনো প্রশ্ন করা হয়েছে, কখনো বিস্ময় প্রকাশ করা হয়েছে, আবার কখনো প্রস্ত্মাব করা হয়েছে। এভাবে Function (কাজ) অনুযায়ী বাক্যকে পাঁচ ভাগে ভাগ করা যায়। যথা :

i) Assertive Sentence
ii) Interrogative Sentence
iii) Imperative Sentence
iv) Optative Sentence
v) Exclamatory Sentence

Assertive Sentence (বিবৃতিমূলক বাক্য)

Shahida Begum is teaching her students and Kamal is listening to her.



পাশের ছবিটিতে শাহিদা বেগম কী করছেন তা বর্ণনা করার জন্য উপরের বাক্যটি লেখা হয়েছে। এভাবে, **কোনো কিছু বর্ণনা বা বিবৃতি করার জন যে বাক্য ব্যবহার করা হয় তাকে Assertive Sentence (Statement) বলে।**

গঠনপ্রণালি (Structure) :

Subject + Verb + Extension + Full stop

The bird + flies.
The boy + is playing + football + in the field.
Honesty + is + the best policy.

Functions (কার্যাবলি) :

১. তথ্য প্রদান-Kazi Nazrul Islam was born in 1899.
২. বর্ণনা-There are rows of trees on both sides of the river.
৩. পরোক্ষ উক্তি-He said that she was honest.
৪. সংজ্ঞা দেওয়া-Greenhouse effect means gradual warming of the air.
৫. সম্ভাবনা বা ক্ষমতা প্রকাশ/ অনুমতি প্রদান-You may go now.

Interrogative Sentence (প্রশ্নবোধক বাক্য)

নিচে বাবুল ও তার বাবার কথোপকথন লক্ষ কর:

Babul : Hello Dad, How are you? (হ্যালো বাবা, আপনি কেমন আছেন?)
Father : Fine, Babul. What about you? When are you coming? (ভালো, বাবুল। তোমার খবর কী? তুমি কবে আসছো?)
Babul : Next week. How is Mom? (আগামী সপ্তাহে। মা কেমন আছেন?)
Father : She is very happy that you are coming. (সে খুবই খুশি যে তুমি আসছো।)



উপরের কথোপকথনে বাবুল এবং তার বাবা বিভিন্ন তথ্য জানার জন্য যে বাক্যগুলো ব্যবহার করেছে তা **Interrogative Sentence** অর্থাৎ, **যে বাক্য দ্বারা কোনো কিছু জানতে চাওয়া হয়, তাকে Interrogative Sentence (Question) বলে।**

গঠনপ্রণালি : (Structure) :

 # 1 : Be/ Auxiliary/ Modal + Sub. + Verb + Extension + ?

Are + you + doing + your homework + ?
Is he a teacher?
Should I go there?

Note : Am, is, are, was, were, be ইত্যাদির পর ম– ল Verb না বসলে এগুলোকে Be verb বলে। কিন্তু এদের পর যদি ম– ল Verb বসে তবে এদেরকে Auxiliary/ Helping

holycrossrajshahi.com

Verb বলে। যেমন– উপরের প্রথম বাক্যে Are হ" ছ Auxiliary কিন্তু দ্বিতীয় বাক্যে Is হ" ছ Be verb.

 # 2 : WH-Word + Auxiliary/ Modal + Verb + Extension + ?

What do you want?
When have you bought the shirt?
What can you do now?

Note : Who (কে/ কারা), Whom (কাকে/ কাদেরকে), Whose (কার/কাদের), Why (কেন), What (কী), Which (কোনটি/ কোনগুলো), When (কখন), Where (কোথায়), How (কীভাবে/কত), How Much (কতটুকু), How Many (কতগুলো) ইত্যাদিকে WH-Words বা WH– Question বলে।

 # 3 : বাক্যে কোনো Be/Auxiliary/Modal না থাকলে Present Tense এর ক্ষেত্রে do/does এবং Past Tense এর ক্ষেত্রে did আনতে হয়।

Do they play football everyday?
Does he go to school in the morning?
Did he come yesterday?

 # 4 : প্রশ্নবোধক শব্দ নিজে Subject হলে do/ does/ did আনতে হবে না।

Who came yesterday?
Who knows the matter?
What pains me?

Functions (কার্যাবলি) :

১. তথ্য জানতে চাওয়া-What is he doing?
২. অনুমতি চাওয়া-May I come in, sir?
৩. অনুরোধ করা-Could you please open the door?

Imperative Sentence (আদেশ/ অনুরোধম– লক বাক্য)



পাশের চিত্রে দেখা যা" ছ একজন Police Officer একজন ব্যক্তিকে হাত তুলতে নির্দেশ দি" ছ। অপরপক্ষে ঐ ব্যক্তি তাকে গুলি না করতে অনুরোধ করছে।

এভাবে, **যে বাক্য দ্বারা আদেশ, উপদেশ, নিষেধ, প্র□াব বা অনুরোধ প্রকাশ করা হয় তাকে Imperative Sentence (Command/ Request) বলে।**

গঠনপ□ালি (Structure) :

(i) Subject যদি you হয় তবে you উহ্য থাকে এর পর Verb + Extension + Full Stop
(You) Speak + the truth.
(You) Go to school every day.
(You) Brush your teeth every day.

(ii) Subject যদি 1st person বা 3rd person হয় তবে:
Let + Subject এর Object রূপ + Verb + Extension + Full Stop
Let + me + do + the work.
Let us go for a walk.
Let the prayer begin.

Point to remember :

- Imperative Sentence এর Verb টির ম– ল রূপ (Base Form) বসে।
- Imperative Sentence এ Request বুঝাতে Please ব্যবহার করা হয়। যেমন: Please, don't forget to write.
- Could you please, Would you please দিয়ে প্রশ্ন করেও Request বুঝানো হয়। যেমন: Would you please shut the door?

Functions (কার্যাবলি) :

১. আদেশ করা-Get out right now.
২. অনুরোধ করা-Please open the door.
৩. নিষেধ করা-Do not run in the sun.
৪. উপদেশ দেয়া-Never tell a lie.
৫. নির্দেশনা দেয়া-Turn to left, then right and there is the office.
৬. প্রস@াব করা-Let's play football.
৭. স্মরণ করিয়ে দেয়া-Don't forget to bring the book.

Optative Sentence (আশীর্বাদমল্লক বাক□)



আশীর্বাদ করার জন্য যে বাক্য ব্যবহার করা হয়, তাকে Optative Sentence বলে। লক্ষ কর:

May you live long.
May Allah help you.

গঠনপ□ালি : (Structure):

May + Subject + Verb (ম– ল রূপ) + Extension + Full Stop
May you pass the examination.
May you be happy in life.
May Bangladesh live long.

কখনো কখনো May বাদ দিয়ে বাক্য গঠন করা যায়।

Long live Bangladesh.

Functions (কার্যাবলি) :

১. কারো ভালো/মন্দ কামনা করা-Wish you good luck.
২. কারো জন্য প্রার্থনা করা-May God help you.

Exclamatory Sentence (বিস্ময়স– চক বাক্য)

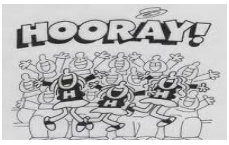
Hooray! We have won the game.

দেখা যা" ছ, ছেলেরা তাদের আনন্দ প্রকাশ করার জন্য Exclamatory word ব্যবহার করেছে।

এভাবে, **দুঃখ, আনন্দ, বিস্ময়, আবেগ ইত□াদি প্রকাশ করতে যে বাক্য ব□বহার করা হয়, তাকে Exclamatory Sentence বলে।**

গঠনপ□ালি : (Structure) :

(i) দুঃখ, আনন্দ, বিস্ময়বোধক শব্দ + Exclamation mark + Assertive
Alas + ! + He is no more.
Hurrah! We have won the match.



(ii) How + adjective/ Adverb + Subject + Verb + Exclamation mark
How + beautiful + the bird + is + !
How + swiftly + he + runs + !

(iii) What + Noun/ Noun Phrase + Subject + Verb + Exclamation mark
What + a beautiful bird + it + is + !

Functions (কার্যাবলি) :

১. আনন্দ, দুঃখ, বিস্ময়, কর" ণা প্রকাশ
২. বিরক্তি প্রকাশ

পাঁচ প্রকার Sentence দ্র" ত চেনার চমৎকার একটি technique নিচে দেয়া হল :

	শুর"	শেষ
1. Assertive	Subject দ্বারা	full stop দ্বারা

2. Interrogative	i) Be/ Aux/ Modal/ WH Question দ্বারা	'?' চিহ্ন দ্বারা
3. Imperative	i) Verb/ Let দ্বারা ii) Please/ Kindly ইত্যাদি দ্বারা	full stop দ্বারা
4. Optative	May/ Long live দ্বারা	full stop দ্বারা
5. Exclamatory	i) How/ What a বা an দ্বারা ii) Exclamatory বাচক শব্দ দ্বারা	'!' চিহ্ন দ্বারা

Negative Sentence (না বোধক বাক্য)

Assertive, Interrogative, Imperative, Optative এই বাক্যগুলো আবার Affirmative (হ্যাঁ বোধক) ও Negative (না বোধক) হতে পারে। উপরের আলোচনায় Affirmative (হ্যাঁ বোধক) বাক্যের গঠন দেখানো হয়েছে। নিচে এই বাক্যগুলোকে কীভাবে Negative (না বোধক) করা যায় তা আলোচনা করা হলো।

(i) Be/ Modal/ Helping verb এর সাথে not যোগ করে Negative Sentence গঠন করা হয়।

Affirmative	*Negative*
We have forgotten him.	We have not forgotten him.
It was raining.	It was not raining.
You must worry.	You must not worry.
Has he gone there?	Has he not gone there?
Is Rahim honest?	Is not Rahim honest?
He is a student	He is not a student.

- Interrogative-এর negative করার সময় খেয়াল রাখতে হবে Subject-টি Pronoun হলে 'Not' Subject এর পরে বসবে এবং Subject-টি Noun হলে 'Not' Subject এর আগে বসবে ।

(ii) Be/ Modal/ Helping verb না থাকলে do/ does/ did-কে Helping Verb হিসেবে আনতে হবে এবং এর সাথে not যোগ করতে হবে।

Affirmative	*Negative*
I like ice cream.	I do not like ice cream.
I went there.	I did not go there.
He goes to school late.	He does not go to school late.
Make a noise.	Do not make a noise.
Tell a lie.	Do not tell a lie.

Point to remember :

- Present Simple Tense এর ক্ষেত্রে Subject টি 3rd Person Singular হলে does not + Verb এর base form বসবে এবং অন্যান্য ক্ষেত্রে do not + Verb এর base form বসবে।
- Past Simple Tense এর ক্ষেত্রে did not + Verb এর base form বসবে।

(iii) Noun এর প– র্বে No ব্যবহার করে। এক্ষেত্রে No এর অর্থ হয় Not any।
I have no pen. I have not any pen.
No man is mortal. Not any man is mortal.

(iv) Negative words (never, seldom, hardly, scarcely, few, little, rarely, neither, no one, nobody, nothing) ব্যবহার করা।
Never tell a lie.
He hardly comes here.
I have few friends.

(v) সাধারণত একই বাক্যে double negative ব্যবহার করা হয় না। কারণ তাতে হ্যাঁ বোধক অর্থ প্রকাশ করে।
Incorrect : I could not see nobody.
Correct : I could see nobody. **Or,**
I could not see anybody.
Incorrect : He has not said nothing.
Correct : He has said nothing. **Or,**
He has not said anything.
এভাবে not ব্যবহার করলে nobody এর পরিবর্তে anybody, no one এর পরিবর্তে any one, nothing এর পরিবর্তে anything; never এর পরিবর্তে ever/ always ব্যবহার করতে হবে। যেমন–
I did **not** meet **anybody** there. I was **not** waiting for **anyone**. They have **not** got **anything** from there.

Practice

A. Write what kind of sentences are the following ones.
(i) Did he never go to school? (ii) The lion caught the mouse. (iii) How did you go there? (iv) I feel good now. (v) How charming the scene is! (vi) I could not get any rickshaw. (vii) Shut the door (viii) Wait there till his arrival. (ix) Rimon and Sumon have joined the team. (x) Let me finish cooking first. (xi) Can I go and watch the TV? (xii) What an intelligent girl you are! (xiii) Take enough rest. (xiv) Mom, tell me a story. (xv) Are they here?

B. Write an assertive sentence as answer to each of these questions.
(i) Can you speak English?
(ii) What do you eat for breakfast?
(iii) Is the rainbow beautiful?
(iv) Who is your favourite actor?
(v) What do you do after school?

C. Write an imperative sentence in response to each of the followings.
(i) It's dark and you want someone to switch on the light.
(ii) Someone is stepping on your toe.
(iii) You need a glass of water.
(iv) Someone is tearing your book.
(v) You see someone teasing a dog.

D. Write an exclamatory sentence in response to each of the followings.
(i) You have found your lost book.
(ii) You see a beautiful flower.
(iii) You see a friend in the street.
(iv) You like your friend's hat very much.
(v) You are very happy that you have passed your exam.

E. Find out the mistakes and rewrite the

holycrossrajshahi.com

sentences in correct form. (i) Where Nasir is going? (ii) I did not bought the book. (iii) Rimel never did not go there. (iv) How nice the story is? (v) He does not want nothing.

Answer

A. i. Interrogative ii. Assertive iii. Interrogative iv. Assertive v. Exclamatory vi. Assertive vii. Imperative viii. Imperative ix. Assertive x. Imperative xi. Interrogative xii. Exclamatory xiii. Imperative xiv. Imperative xv. Interrogative

B. (i) Yes, I can/ No, I can't (ii) I eat some ruti and vegetables (iii) Yes, the rainbow is beautiful (iv) My favourite actor is Amin Khan. (v) I play in the field after school.

C. (i) Switch on the light. (ii) Please, stay aside. (iii) Give me a glass of water. (iv) Don't tear my book. (v) Don't tease the dog.

D. (i) Wow! I have found my lost book.
(ii) What a beautiful flower it is!
(iii) Hello, Friend!
(iv) How nice your hat is!
(v) Hurrah! I have passed in the exam.

E. (i) Where is Nasir going? (ii) I did not buy the book. (iii) Rimel never went there. (iv) How nice the story is! (v) He wants nothing.

Parts of Speech 2

'Parts' অর্থ অংশসম– হ আর 'Speech' অর্থ বক্তব্য বা বাক্য। সুতরাং Parts of speech-এর অর্থ বাক্যের অংশ বা পদসম– হ। নিচের কথোপকথনটি পড় :



Doraemon : Hello, Nobita! What are you doing?
Nobita : Nothing special.
Doraemon : Have you done your homework?
Nobita : No. Doraemon, will you give a gadget to complete my homework?
Doraemon : No, Nobita. You always do this.

উপরের কথোপকথনটির প্রতিটি বাক্য কিছু শব্দের সমন্বয়ে গঠিত হয়েছে। অর্থাৎ মনের ভাব প্রকাশ করতে আমরা শব্দের সাহায্য নেই। আর এই শব্দগুলোকেই বলা হয় Parts of Speech।

সংজ্ঞাটি এমন, **বাক্যের অন্তর্গত পৃথক পৃথক অর্থবোধক প্রতিটি শব্দকে Parts of Speech বলে।** 'What are you doing?' এই বাক্যটিতে মোট চারটি শব্দ অর্থাৎ চারটি Parts of Speech রয়েছে।

Kinds/ Classification (cÖKvi ‡f`)

কাজ (Function) ও অর্থ (Meaning) অনুযায়ী ইংরেজিতে Parts of Speech কে আট ভাগে ভাগ করা হয়। যথা :

1. Noun (বিশেষ্য)
2. Pronoun (সর্বনাম)
3. Adjective (বিশেষণ)
4. Verb (ক্রিয়া)
5. Adverb (ভাব বিশেষণ)
6. Preposition (পদান্বয়ী অব্যয়)
7. Conjunction (সংযোজক অব্যয়)
8. Interjection (বিস্ময়স– চক অব্যয়)

1. Noun (বিশেষ্য) : যে Word দ্বারা কোনো ব্যক্তি, বস্তু, স্থান, প্রাণী, পদার্থ, গুণ ইত্যাদির কিংবা কোনো কাজের নাম বুঝায় তাকেই Noun বলে। (A Noun is the name of a person, thing, place, quality, substance or a group.)
সংক্ষেপে কোনো কিছুর নামকেই Noun বলে। (A Noun is the name of anything.)

উদাহরণ :

Person (ব্যক্তি) : Rasel, Ripon, Anthony, Kona, Raiyan, Mamun ইত্যাদি।

Things (বস্তু) : Chair, Table, The Padma, Pen, Phone, Fan, Paper ইত্যাদি।

Place (স্থান) : Dhaka, Mumbai, London, Sydney ইত্যাদি।

Animal (প্রাণী) : Dog, Cat, Tiger, Cow, Monkey ইত্যাদি।

Quality (গুণ) : Kindness, Honesty, Knowledge, Punctuality ইত্যাদি।

Work (কাজ) : Work, Dance, Destruction ইত্যাদি।

2. Pronoun (সর্বনাম) : Noun-এর পরিবর্তে যে সকল শব্দ ব্যবহৃত হয় সেগুলোকে Pronoun বলে। (A Pronoun is a word which is used instead of a Noun.)

উদাহরণ : I, we, you, he, she, they, her, me, my, your, our, us, him, his, them, their, it ইত্যাদি।

মনে রাখবে, Pronoun-র First, Second এবং Third person হয়। যেমন, I, we, me, us, my, mine, our, ours-এগুলো first person.

you, your, yours– second person.

He, She, His, Her, They, Their, It, Its ইত্যাদি Third person.

3. Adjective (বিশেষণ) : যে Word দ্বারা কোনো Noun বা

holycrossrajshahi.com

Pronoun-এর দোষ, গুণ, অবস্থা, সংখ্যা, পরিমাণ ইত্যাদি প্রকাশ পায় তাকে Adjective বলে। (An Adjective is a word that expresses the quality, quantity, condition or number of a Noun or Pronoun.)

উদাহরণ : good, bad, ill, old, some, little, wise, five, ugly, poor ইত্যাদি।

মনে রাখবে, Adjective Noun/ Pronoun টি কেমন, কতগুলো, কতখানি ইত্যাদি নির্দেশ করে। এখন নিচের Sentence গুলো খেয়াল কর।

Raiyan is a <u>little</u> boy.
We have <u>three</u> cows.
A moonlit night is <u>beautiful</u>.
I have <u>much</u> money.

উপরের Sentence গুলোতে underline করা শব্দগুলো এক একটি Adjective। শব্দগুলো কেমন, কতগুলো, পরিমাণ নির্দেশ করে।

4. **Verb (ক্রিয়া) :** যে Word দ্বারা কোনো কিছু করা, হওয়া, যাওয়া ইত্যাদি কাজ করা বুঝায় তাকে Verb বলে। (A Verb is a word that expresses the doing of an action or being.)

উদাহরণ : am, is, are, was, were, have, has, had, read, come, go, write, play, speak, tell, run, eat, drink ইত্যাদি।

এখন নিচের Sentence গুলোতে underline করা word গুলো লক্ষ কর, এগুলো এক একটি কাজ বুঝা" ছ।

Nilu <u>cuts</u> the rope.
Mika <u>has</u> a dictionary.
Jabir <u>posted</u> a new picture in his account.

5. **Adverb (ক্রিয়া বিশেষণ, ভাব বিশেষণ বা বিশেষণের বিশেষণ) :** যে Word দ্বারা ম– লত কোনো Verb-এর কাজ কখন, কোথায়, কীভাবে সম• ন্ন হয় তা বুঝায় তাকে Adverb বলে। তবে Adverb কখনও কখনও কোনো Adjective বা অন্য আরেকটি Adverb-কে modify করতে পারে। (An Adverb is a word which expresses mainly the time, place or manner of the action of a Verb. It can also modify an Adjective or another Adverb.)

উদাহরণ : slowly, quickly, fast, hard, loudly, happily, softly, rightly, here, there, today, tomorrow, yesterday, very, extremely ইত্যাদি।

এবার উপরের সংজ্ঞার সাথে উদাহরণগুলো মিলিয়ে দেখ, বিষয়টি বুঝতে পারবে।

Nila walks <u>slowly</u>. (কীভাবে)
We celebrate Eid <u>gaily</u>. (কীভাবে)
Nasrin will come <u>here</u>. (কোথায়)
Mother cooked biryani <u>yesterday</u>. (কখন বা কবে)

6. **Preposition (সম্বন্ধ বা পদান্বয়ী অব্যয়) :** যে Word কোনো Noun বা Pronoun-এর প– র্বে বসে সে Noun বা Pronoun এর সঙ্গে বাক্যের অপর কোনো Word-এর সম• র্ক প্রকাশ করে তাকে Preposition বলে। (A Preposition is a word that is used before a Noun or a Pronoun to show its relation with some other words or parts of speech in a sentence.)

উদাহরণ : At, by, in, on, of, to, up, into, with, within, beside, about, over, under, between, among ইত্যাদি।

7. **Conjunction (সংযোজক অব্যয়) :** যে word দুই বা ততোধিক Word, Phrase বা Clause-কে সংযুক্ত করে তাকে Conjunction বলে। (A Conjunction is a word which joins two or more words, phrases or clauses in a sentence.)

উদাহরণ : and, or, but, not only…….but also, yet, if, though, although, unless, as, so that, when, where, who, what ইত্যাদি।

8. **Interjection (আবেগ বা বিস্ময়সচ্চক অবয়্রি) :** যে Word দ্বারা আবেগের সাথে মনের আনন্দ, দুঃখ, বিস্ময়, ঘৃণা, ভয় ইত্যাদি প্রকাশ করা হয় তাকে Interjection বলে। (An Interjection is a word which expresses some strong feelings of the mind emotionally like joy, sorrow, surprise etc.)

উদাহরণ : Alas, Hurrah, Bravo, Fie, Hush, Oh, O! ইত্যাদি।

Practice



1. Read the following passage and write the parts of speech of the underlined words:

<u>Anwar Hussain</u> <u>lived</u> <u>with</u> his son. <u>He</u> had <u>three</u> <u>grandchildren</u>. He <u>often</u> <u>sat</u> with <u>them</u>. He loved them <u>very</u> much <u>and</u> <u>sometimes</u> he told them <u>interesting</u> <u>stories</u>. He was a very <u>good</u> story teller and <u>many</u> <u>children</u> <u>enjoyed</u> his stories. How interesting the stories were!

Answers

1. Anwar Hussain – Noun
lived – Verb
with – Preposition
He – Pronoun
three – Adjective
grandchildren – Noun
often – Adverb
sat – Verb
them – Pronoun
very – Adverb

holycrossrajshahi.com

and	– Conjunction
sometimes	– Adverb
interesting	– Adjective
stories	– Noun
good	– Adjective
many	– Adjective
children	– Noun
enjoyed	– Verb

Use of Nouns 3

Saleh Uddin is a shepherd. He lives in Bandarban. Everyday he takes the flock of sheep to the field. He has a dog, named Tom to control the sheep. The dog also guards him. So he is free from the fear of wild animals.



উপরের Underline করা Saleh Uddin, shepherd, dog, sheep, animal, Tom, flock, fear এই শব্দগুলো কোনো কিছুর নাম। যেমন :

shepherd, dog, sheep, animal- ব্যক্তি ও প্রাণীর সাধারণ নাম।

Saleh Uddin, Bandarban, Tom -যথাক্রমে একজন ব্যক্তির, স্থানের ও কুকুরের নিজস্ব নাম।

Flock - কিছু প্রাণীর একটি দলের নাম।

Fear - এমন একটি অনুভূতির নাম যা দেখা বা ছোঁয়া যায় না।

এভাবে, **যে word সারা কোনো ব্যক্তি, বস্তু, স্থান, প্রাণী, পদার্থ, গুণ ইত্যাদির নাম বুঝায় তাকেই Noun বলে।**

Kinds of Noun (Noun Gi cÖKvi ‡f`)

Noun প্রধানত দুই প্রকার :

1. Concrete Noun (ইন্দ্রিয়গ্রাহ্য বিশেষ্য)
2. Abstract Noun (গুণবাচক বিশেষ্য)

1. Concrete Noun :

যে Noun দ্বারা বাহ্যিক আকৃতি সম্পন্ন কোনো বস্তুকে বুঝায় এবং ইন্দ্রিয় দ্বারা যাকে উপলব্ধি করা যায়, তাকে Concrete Noun বলে। যেমন–Cock, Baby, Computer, Fan ইত্যাদি।

2. Abstract Noun :

যে Noun দ্বারা কোনো ব্যক্তি বা বস্তুর আকার, পরিমাণ, দোষ, গুণ, অবস্থা বা কার্যের নামকে প্রকাশ করে, তাকে Abstract Noun বলে। যেমন–

(a) গুণের নাম (Quality) : Truthfulness, Radiance, Sweetness, Soundness etc.

(b) অবস্থা (State) : Poverty, Death, Youth, Birth.



(c) মন্দগুণ : Weakness, Poverty, Atrocity, Dishonesty etc.

(d) সংখ্যা : five, fifth, one, second etc.

(e) পরিমাণ : much, more, few, some etc.

Concrete Noun কে চার ভাগে ভাগ করা যায়। যথা :

(i) Proper Noun
(ii) Common Noun
(iii) Collective Noun
(iv) Material Noun.

Proper Noun (নামবাচক বিশেষ্য) :

Rifat is a good boy.
Dhaka is the capital of Bangladesh.
The Meghna is a big river.

উপরের sentence-গুলোতে Rifat শব্দটি একজন ব্যক্তি/ছেলের নিজস্ব নাম, Dhaka একটি স্থানের নিজস্ব নাম, Bangladesh একটি দেশের নিজস্ব নাম।

অর্থাৎ, **কোনো ব্যক্তি, বস্তু, স্থান প্রভৃতির নিজস্ব যে নাম থাকে সেটি Proper Noun।**

উলেখ্য যে, Proper Noun-এর প্রথম অক্ষর সর্বদা Capital letter হয়।

Common Noun (জাতিবাচক বিশেষ্য) :

Rifat is a good boy. Dipu is a naughty boy.
The Meghna is a big river. The Padma is a big river.

উপরের sentence-গুলোতে Rifat ও Dipu দুটি বালকের যার যার নিজস্ব নাম কিন্তু boy শব্দটি উভয়ের ক্ষেত্রে ব্যবহার করা হয়েছে।



আবার Meghna ও Padma দুটি নদীর যার যার নিজস্ব নাম কিন্তু river শব্দটি উভয়ের ক্ষেত্রে ব্যবহার করা হয়েছে।

এভাবে, **যে Noun এক জাতীয় ব্যক্তি, প্রাণী বা বস্তুর সবার ক্ষেত্রে ব্যবহার করা হয় সেটি Common Noun।**

Collective Noun (সমষ্টিবাচক বিশেষ্য) :

Rahim reads in class ten.
Our team won the game.
He has been in the army for years.

উপরের sentence-গুলোতে যেসব noun-এর নিচে দাগ দেওয়া হয়েছে সেগুলোর প্রত্যেকটি দ্বারা একটি শ্রেণির কয়েকজনের সমন্বয় বোঝাে" ছ এবং নতুন নামে পরিচিত হ" ছ। যেমন কিছু soldiers এর সমন্বয়ে একটি দল করে তার নাম দেয়া হয় army। তাই army হলো collective noun। এভাবে কিছু students এর সমন্বয়ে class; কিছু players এর সমন্বয়ে Team।



এভাবে, **এক শেণির কিছু সংখ্যক ব্যক্তি বা বস্তু নিয়ে নতুন একটি দল করে তার যে নাম দেয়া হয় তা Collective Noun।**

Material Noun (বস্তুবাচক বিশেষ্য) :

Milk contains vitamin.
Oil floats on water.
The woman is weighing rice.

উপরের sentence-গুলোর যে শব্দের নিচে দাগ দেওয়া হয়েছে সেগুলো বিভিন্ন ধরনের বস্তুর নাম। এ সকল বস্তুকে গণনা করা যায় না, কিন্তু মাপা যায়। আমরা বলতে পারি না *a milk, three water অথবা four rice। কিন্তু আমরা বলতে পারি a litre of milk, three gallons of water, four kgs of rice।

এভাবে, **যে Noun সারা কোনো পদার্থের সমুদয় অংশকে অখণ্ডভাবে বুঝায়, কিন্তু সে পদার্থ হতে উৎপন্ন কোনো বস্তুকে বুঝায় না বা যা সংখ্যা দ্বারা গণনা করা যায় না, শুধু পরিমাণ দ্বারা বুঝা যায় তাকে Material Noun বলে।**

holycrossrajshahi.com

Practice

A. Read the following passage and make charts of different kinds of nouns

Grandfather told a story about a boy called Paulo. The boy lived in Brazil. One day he saw a bird in his garden. The bird gave Paulo a strange big bean. He planted the bean and after a month it began to grow very quickly. It grew up through the clouds. Paulo climbed up to the top of the tree and saw a gold coin in a blue flower. He gave the coin to his parents. They were very happy.

B. Fill in the gaps using noun from the boxes. There are more words than necessary

01.

years	containers	society	people
family	nets	change	water

A Bonsai tree grows in small (a) —. It is not more than one foot only in spite of ten (b) —old. The Bonsai tree had its origin in China. The aristocratic (c) — of Japan were also fond of it. They had a contribution to its development. A small pot and less soil are required to grow it. Small (d) — are also used to cover the holes at the bottom of the container. This is done only to prevent the soil from flowing out with (e) —.

02.

self-reliance	education	sectors	family
society	change	development	process

Proper (a) — provides a learner with opportunities to expose all his latent talents. Its aim is to train him physically and mentally so that he can contribute to his (b) — as well as to the (c) — . An educated man is self-reliant, but he also assists others in attaining (d) —. He is supposed to be well-mannered, kind and sympathetic. So, he is the very person who is needed for the (e) — of the country.

03.

information	globalisation	nets	internet
family	change	world	knowledge

Information technology has quickened the process of (a) —. In the field of information technology (b) — plays a vital role. It has made the world smaller and brought the world within our reach. It can transmit (c) — within a short time. It has also brought a great (d) — in banking and financial sectors. It has widened our (e) — and made us more thirsty for the unknown.

04.

domination	resources	people	place
freedom	pollution	world	liberty

(a) — does not descend upon a people; a people must raise themselves to it. It is a fruit that must be earned before it can be enjoyed. That freedom means freedom only from foreign (b) — is an outworn idea. It is not merely the government that should be free, but (c) — themselves should be free. And no freedom has any real value for the common men or women unless it also means freedom from want, freedom from disease and freedom from ignorance. This is the main task which confronts us if we are to take our rightful place in the modern (d) —. So, we must go forward at a double pace bending all our (e) — and energies to this great purpose.

05.

friend	fuel	oxygen	resources
freedom	trees	knowledge	environment

The people of our country cut down (a) — on a large scale. They use wood as (b) —. Trees are used for burning bricks in the brick fields. That is why, our country is losing her trees largely. But trees are our real (c) —. It provides us with food, clothing, shelter, and oxygen. Without inhaling (d) — we can't live even for a moment. Our (e) — is getting polluted every day. Trees help to prevent air pollution. Really, we can't live without the direct assistance of tree. So, tree planting/ plantation must be practised for our betterment.

06.

oceans	climate	fuel	atmosphere
world	climatologists	friend	temperature

The (a) — of the world is undergoing a great change. The world's (b) — is increasing day by day. This increase in global warming is caused by increased amount of carbon dioxide around the earth. Most (c) — believe that the greenhouse effect is the likely cause of global warming. The greenhouse effect is the gradual warming of the (d) — as a result of heat being trapped by environmental pollution. The (e) — are also affected because of pollution caused by human waste and industrial waste products.

07.

friend	publicity	oceans	world
honour	articles	destruction	climate

Every year, when the Nobel Prizes are announced, there is a great deal of (a) — about the winners. They are interviewed on (b) — written about them. This is because winning the Nobel Prize is considered by most people the highest (c) — that can be achieved in particular fields of work. The noble thing about the prizes is that they were started by a man who did a great deal of help to the science of (d) —. Having created such a deadly explosive, Nobel felt a need to do something 'Noble" for the (e) —.

08.

pollution	destruction	warming	friend
climate	earth	world	products

Greenhouse effect is the gradual (a) — of the air

holycrossrajshahi.com

surrounding the (b) — as a result of heat being trapped by environmental (c) —. This is exemplified by the (d) — and burning down of tropical rain forests, by traffic that clogs up city streets, by the rapid growth of industry, the use of chlorofluorocarbon (CFC) in packaging and manufacturing commercial (e) —, the use of detergents such as washing powder and washing-up liquid and so on.

09.

country	professionals	earth	culture
brotherhood	problem	trees	friendship

Education promotes universal (a) —. Since education broadens a person's mentality and outlook, he comes out of the boundary of his own (b) —. He gets acquainted with the tradition and (c) — of other countries of the world. Besides, the brilliant students of the developing countries go to the developed countries for higher education and make (d) — with the students of those countries. Again, the engineers, scientists, doctors and men of other professions of the developed countries with their vast knowledge and rich experience come to the developing countries and train the (e) — of the developing countries.

10.

occurrence	code	problem	country
earthquake	culture	opinion	faultlines

Experts are divided in their opinion as regards (a) — warning in Bangladesh. Some think that recurrent (b) — of earthquakes in recent years is a sign. Others are of (c) — that though there is the presence of a number of (d) — in the area covering Bangladesh, none of them is active enough to cause serious earthquakes. RAJUK believes that an earthquake resistant building (e) — should be developed to minimize the losses.

Answers

A.

Proper	Common
Paulo, Brazil,	Grandfather, story, day, boy, bird, top, garden, month, flower, bean parrents, cloud, coin

B.

01. (a) containers (b) years (c) people (d) nets (e) water
02. (a) education (b) family (c) society (d) self-reliance (e) development
03. (a) globalisation (b) internet (c) information (d) change (e) knowledge
04. (a) Liberty (b) domination (c) people (d) world (e) resources
05. (a) trees (b) fuel (c) friend (d) oxygen (e) environment
06. (a) climate (b) temperature (c) climatologists (d) atmosphere (e) oceans
07. (a) publicity (b) articles (c) honour (d) destruction (e) world
08. (a) warming (b) earth (c) pollution (d) destruction (e) products
09. (a) brotherhood (b) country (c) culture (d) friendship (e) professionals
10. (a) earthquake (b) occurrence (c) opinion (d) faultlines (e) code

Use of Pronouns 4

যে Word কোনো Noun এর পরিবর্তে ব্যবহৃত হয় তাকে Pronoun বলে। যেমন : He, she, it, this, they, etc.

This is a book.
Rahim is a teacher. He is my brother.
Salma is a student. She reads in DU.

Kinds of Pronoun (Pronoun Gi cÖKvi ‡f`)

Pronoun কে আট ভাগে ভাগ করা যায় : যথা–

1. Personal Pronoun (ব্যক্তিবাচক সর্বনাম) :

যে সকল Pronoun কোনো ব্যক্তি বা বস্তুর নামের পরিবর্তে ব্যবহৃত হয়, তাদেরকে Personal Pronoun বলে।

উদাহরণ : I, we, us, you, your, he, him, his, her, they, their, them, me, my etc.

নিচের ছবিটি দেখ এবং বাক্যগুলো পড়:

I am your English teacher. I will teach you 'person' today. You will learn about persons. But Tipu is absent today. He will miss the lesson.



উপরের উদাহরণে দেখা যাে ছ, I বলতে বুঝাে ছ যে কথা বলছে; You বলতে বুঝাে ছ যাকে বলছে এবং He বলতে বুঝাে ছ যার সম্বন্ধে বলছে। এভাবে ইংরেজিতে তিনটি person আছে। যেমন :

First person– যে বা যারা কথা বলে।

Second person– যাকে বা যাদেরকে উদ্দেশ্য করে কথা বলা হয়।

Third person– যার বা যাদের সম্বন্ধে কথা বলা হয়।

এ তিনটি person এর স্থলে যে সকল pronoun ব্যবহার করা হয় তাদের বলা হয় Personal Pronouns। Personal pronouns-এর তালিকা নিচের ছকে দেয়া হলো।

Person	*Singular*	*Plural*
First Person	I	We
Second Person	You	You
Third Person	He, She, It, Kamal	They

2. Demonstrative Pronoun (নির্দেশক সর্বনাম) :

যে Pronoun কোনো ব্যক্তি বা বস্তুর পরিবর্তে বসে সেটিকে নির্দেশ করে, তাকে Demonstravitve Pronoun বলে। যেমন : This, that, such, these, those.

3. Distributive Pronoun :

যে Pronoun দুই বা ততোধিক ব্যক্তি বা বস্তুকে পৃথক পৃথকভাবে

holycrossrajshahi.com

নির্দেশ করে, তাকে Distributive Pronoun বলে। যেমন : each, every, either, neither.

Each of the two boys is good.
Every girl in the class is brilliant.

4. Indefinite Pronoun (অনির্দি□বাচক সর্বনাম) :
যে Pronoun অনির্দিষ্ট কোনো ব্যক্তি বা বস্তুকে বুঝায়, তাকে Indefinite Pronoun বলে। যেমন : One, none, any, anyone, anybody, anything, everyone, everything, some, someone, somebody, something.
Anyone can do it. Someone is coming.

5. Interrogative Pronoun : যে Pronoun দ্বারা কোনো কিছু জানতে চাওয়া হয় অর্থাৎ প্রশ্ন করা হয়, তাকে Interrogative Pronoun বলে। যেমন : Who, what, which, when, where, whom, whose.

Who is doing the work?
Which pen do you want?
What is your name?

6. Relative Pronoun :
যে Pronoun দুইটি বাক্যাংশকে যুক্ত করে, তাকে Relative Pronoun বলে। যেমন : Who, what, which, when, where, whose, whom, that.

I know where he lives.
I have a pet bird which can talk.
I saw that he was reading.

এখানে প্রথম বাক্যে I know এবং he lives দুইটি বাক্যাংশ এবং where দ্বারা যুক্ত করা হয়েছে।

7. Reciprocal Pronoun :
Reciprocal Pronoun দুই বা ততোধিক ব্যক্তির মধ্যে পারস্• রিক সম• র্ক বুঝাতে ব্যবহৃত হয়। যেমন :
Each other, one another.
The two friends help each other. (দুইজনের মধ্যে)
They embraced one another. (অনেকের মধ্যে)

8. Reflexive Pronoun/ Emphatic Pronoun :
যে Pronoun নিজের সম• র্কে কিছু বলে, তাকে Reflexive Pronoun বলে। মনে রাখবে, একটি verb এর Subject ও Object একই হলে Object হিসেবে Reflexive Pronoun ব্যবহার করা হয়। যেমন :

They killed themselves. (তারা আত্মহত্যা করল।)

Selina looked at herself. (সেলিনা নিজের দিকে তাকাল।)

Note : Self বা Selves যুক্ত Pronoun গুলোই Reflexive Pronoun.

• **Emphatic Pronoun :**
Self (একবচনে) বা selves (বহুবচনে) যুক্ত Personal Pronoun যখন Subject এর পরেই বসে তার ওপর জোর প্রদান করে তখন তাকে **Emphatic Pronoun** বলে। যেমন :

I myself did the work. (আমি নিজেই কাজটি করেছি।)
We ourselves did the work. (আমরা নিজেরাই কাজটি করেছি।)

Practice

A. Find out the pronouns in the following sentences and classify them.
(a) One should not be harmful to others.
(b) Either of the pens will do.
(c) He has done the work himself.
(d) The girls played with one another.
(e) This is the teacher.

B. Use appropriate pronoun in the gaps.
1. The man showed — a picture. (he)
2. — brother came to see — . (I), (I)
3. Where is — going? (he)
4. — don't know where — is going. (I), (he)
5. — sister is a friend of — . (he), (I)
6. Will — give — a ring? (you), (I)
7. That big house is — . (they)
8. — is much smaller. (we)
9. — dog has lost — tail. (we), (it)
10. — teacher is very strict. (you)

C. Fill in the gaps using simple pronouns from the list given in the box.

01.

which	It	everybody's	hers	anyone

(a) Ask —. They will tell you that he is an honest man.
(b) I read a story. — is very interesting.
(c) Things have been arranged to — satisfaction.
(d) This umbrella is — .
(e) He made a long speech — was boring.

02.

anybody	himself	either	who/ nobody

(a) The manager spoke to — .
(b) — chose it for them?
(c) — believes a liar.
(d) Did — telephone me?
(e) I don't like — of the boys.

03.

something	anything	himself	what	Any of

(a) The man killed — .
(b) — were the class 8 students given?
(c) I saw — in the air.
(d) — these pens is good.
(e) Do you want — else?

04.

anybody	all	any	you	anything	another

(a) — men are subject to error.
(b) You have given an example. Can you give —?
(c) You can buy this book from — shop.

holycrossrajshahi.com

(d) The subject is easy. — can learn it.
(e) The situation is uncertain. — might happen.

05.

nothing	something	none	everything	somebody

(a) — but the rich can afford a car.
(b) — comes out of nothing.
(c) — must have taken my pen.
(d) We must do — to improve in English.
(e) — went according to plan.

D. Fill in the gaps using pronouns from the list given in the box.

01.

our	it	they	he
my	we	them	she

Amongst all the exhibitions, the book fairs are of recent origin. (a) — are frequently held in towns and cities now. Last year (b) — visited Ekushey Boi Mela in Bangla Academy premises. There were a number of stalls and thousands of books were displayed. (c) — was a great opportunity of collecting a varied choice of books. In the fair, book lovers crowd there. I was tempted to buy a lot of books but (d) — purse didn't permit me. So I bought a few books and had a lot of catalogues. However a book fair spreads the message that books are the best friends. Books enlarge our vision and make (e) — life meaningful.

02.

our	it	they	it
they	we	them	she

Food habit of people differs from country to country because of geographical position, climate and soil. (a) — changes with the passage of time. People living in the tropical countries eat a lot of fruits and vegetables. (b) — also eat a lot of fish. The people of Hawaii and Polynesia in the pacific live on taro roots, bread, fruit and sea food. The chief food of the Indians of Central America are fruits and vegetables because (c) — get these things available. The Eskimos eat meat and fish because (d) — is too difficult for (e) — to grow vegetables in the regions which are covered with ice.

03.

we	it	they	it
they	we	them	she

Mobile phone is one of the wonderful gifts of modern science. (a) — has added a new dimension to (b) — life and communication system. Through mobile phone, (c) — can send messages to distant places, play games and sports know about time, solve the work of calculation and be aware of different kinds of news and views. At present, the popularity of mobile phone is increasing. In a very single moment, (d) — can communicate with the people living in a very distant place by using (e) —.

04.

he	it	they	
us	we	them	our

Good manners form an important part of (a) — education. Our education remains incomplete if (b) — don't learn good manners. In our conduct with others we must show proper respect for (c) — –. We should have a sense of fitness in our behaviour with others. We should show respect to our superiors. (d) — is necessary for a disciplined society. Good manners cost (e) — nothing. So, good manners should be a part of our nature.

05.

it	them	us	our
we	their	he	they

People around the world are slowly changing (a) — attitude towards medicine. More and more (b) — are turning to natural cures. Natural cures are antidote of natural things, most of herbs and plants. History says that natural or herbal remedies are nothing new. People used (c) — all along in different ages. Herbal medicines were used in civilizations like India, China, Greece, Egypt and Rome. Some ancient treatment is still in practice today. But in (d) — society there are still some malpractices in the name of treatment. (e) — should stop these malpractices.

06.

ourselves	we	it	us
it	they	our	them

Road accidents have become a common feature of everyday life in (a) — country, Bangladesh. A lot of reasons act behind (b) —. Roadside environment, poor design of junctions and road sections, excessive speed, dangerous overtaking, reckless driving, disobeying mandatory traffic rules, variety of traffics' characteristics and defects of vehicles are the principal reasons of (c) —. Besides, road accidents are the major challenges for the development of Bangladesh. (d) — should search the way how to overcome these fatal problems and save (e) —.

07.

one	their	it	ourselves
us	they	our	our

(a) — is neighbourly feeling that binds society together. In very olden times, however, people did not think like this. (b) — were then savages little better than beasts and fought with (c) — another. But gradually men became civilized. They saw that if they behaved in this way, society would be destroyed. So, (d) — made certain rules to properly guide (e) — conducts. Today the situation is totally changed.

08.

them	us	he	she

it	their	our	we

(a) — freedom fighters are the real heroes of our country. (b) — should remember (c) — as they sacrificed their lives for motherland. But (d) — is a matter of great regret that most of them are neglected and our young generation do not know about (e) — valiant struggle. Still today many of them have not been found out really established. Some of them lead very poor life. So the govt. should take proper step and give them right honour.

09.

them	they	us	we
their	he	our	it

While eating food (a) — should bear in mind that we don't just to satisfy (b) — hunger or to fill the belly. We eat to preserve our health. Good health needs good food. Sometimes (c) — so happens that people who live in the midst of plenty of food do not eat right food because they have no knowledge about the science of health and nutritions. (d) — do not know how to select a balanced diet from many foods that are necessary to (e) —.

10.

our	their	us	them
It	one	they	we

Education removes our ignorance and gives (a) – – light of knowledge. In respect of imparting education there should be no discrimination between man and woman. (b) — is one of the basic human rights. If (c) — deprive women of (d) — right of education, almost half of (e) — population will remain in darkness. No development can be brought about without participation of women. So the govt. is doing everything to educate the women folk.

Answers

A.
(a) One – Indefinite Pronoun.
Others – Indefinite Pronoun.
(b) Either – Distributive Pronoun.
(c) He – Personal Pronoun.
Himself – Reflexive Pronoun.
(d) One another – Reciprocal Pronoun.
(e) This – Demonstrative Pronoun.

B. 1. him 2. My, me 3. he 4. I, he 5. Her, mine 6. you, me 7. their 8. Ours 9. Our, its 10. your

C.
01. a. anyone b. It c. everybody's d. hers e. which
02. a himself b. Who c. Nobody d. anybody e. either
03. a. himself b. What c. something d. Any of e. anything
04. a. All b. another c. any d. Anybody e. Anything
05. a. None b. Nothing c. Somebody d. something e. Everything

D.
01. (a) They (b) I (c) It (d) my (e) our
02. (a) It (b) They (c) they (d) it (e) them
03. (a) It (b) our (c) we (d) we (e) it
04. (a) our (b) we (c) them (d) It (e) us
05. (a) their (b) they (c) them (d) our (e) We
06. (a) our (b) it (c) it (d) We (e) ourselves
07. (a) It (b) They (c) one (d) they (e) their
08. (a) Our (b) We (c) them (d) it (e) their
09. (a) we (b) our (c) it (d) They (e) them
10. (a) us (b) It (c) we (d) their (e) our

Use of Adjectives 5



The man is tall and has long, black hair. He has worn a black pant and a T-shirt. লোকটিকে বর্ণনা করার জন্য tall শব্দটি, লোকটির চুল বর্ণনা করার জন্য long ও black এবং পোষাকের বর্ণনার জন্য black শব্দগুলি ব্যবহার করা হয়েছে।
এভাবে, **কোনো noun কে বর্ণনা করার জন্য যে শব্দ ব্যবহার করা হয় তা হলো adjective।**

Kinds of Adjective (Adjective Gi cÖKvi ‡f `)

রূপভেদে বিভিন্ন প্রকার Adjective-কে নিম্নোক্ত শ্রেণিতে বিভক্ত করা যায়। যথা :

(a) Adjective of Quality : যে সকল Adjective কোনো ব্যক্তি বা বস্তুর দোষ, গুণ, অবস্থা বা পরিচয় প্রকাশ করে, তাদেরকে Adjective of Quality বলে। যেমন :

Maruf is honest.

This is a white cow.

It is a ripe mango.

The pen is new.

মনে রাখবে, adjective of quality -এর মধ্যে কোনো ব্যক্তি বা বস্তুর colour, shape, size, taste, physical condition, mental condition অন্ত©র্ভুক্ত।

(b) Adjective of Quantity : যে সকল Adjective কোনো Noun-এর পরিমাণ নির্দেশ করে তাদেরকে Adjective of Quantity বলে। এ জাতীয় adjective সাধারণত material noun ও abstract noun এর প– র্বে বসে। যেমন :

There is little milk in the glass.

He has much money.

I want some rice.

holycrossrajshahi.com

Some শব্দটি সাধারণত হ্যাঁ-বোধক বাক্যে বসে এবং any শব্দটি না-বোধক ও প্রশ্ন-বোধক বাক্যে বসে।

(c) Adjective of Number or Numeral Adjective :

যে সকল Adjective কোনো Noun-এর সংখ্যা, ক্রমানুসারে অবস্থান বা পর্যায় বুঝায় তাদেরকে Adjective of Number বলে।

এ জাতীয় adjective সাধারণত countable noun এর প– র্বে বসে। যেমন :

He has <u>five</u> pens.

January is the <u>first</u> month of the year.

উল্লেখ্য Adjective of Number আবার দুই প্রকার। যথা :

(i) Definite Numeral Adjective : One, two, three, first, second ইত্যাদি।

(ii) Indefinite Numeral Adjective : All, some, many ইত্যাদি যেমন : <u>all</u> boys, <u>some</u> babies, <u>many</u> students ইত্যাদি।

☑ All, some এই Adjective গুলো Adjective of Quantity (পরিমাণবাচক বিশেষণ)ও হতে পারে যদি তাদের পর Uncountable Noun বসে। যেমন: **all** happiness ।

☑ Adjective of Number কে cardinal adjective ও ordinal adjective এই দুভাগেও ভাগ করা হয়। cardinal adjective বলতে নির্দিষ্ট সংখ্যাবাচক adjective কে বুঝায়। যেমন: one, two, three ইত্যাদি। আবার ordinal adjective বলতে ক্রমবাচক adjective কে বুঝায়। যেমন: first, second, third ইত্যাদি।

(d) Pronominal Adjective :

যে সকল Pronoun, Noun এর প– র্বে বসে Adjective এর কাজ করে, তাদেরকে Pronominal Adjective বলে। যেমন : my, his, her, your, this, that, what, which, whose, every, each ইত্যাদি।

উদাহরণ : <u>My</u> name is Faruk.

<u>That</u> book belongs to me.

<u>Which</u> book do you want?

What is <u>your</u> name?

<u>Each</u> boy got a prize.

Pronominal Adjective কে চার ভাগে ভাগ করা যায়।

Demonstrative (নিকটবর্তী ও দ– রবর্তী নির্দেশক শব্দ যখন noun এর প– র্বে বসে adjective এর কাজ করে)	Interrogative (which, what, whose যখন noun এর প– র্বে বসে adjective এর কাজ করে)	Distributive (each, every, either, neither যখন noun এর প– র্বে বসে adjective এর কাজ করে)	Possessive (কারো অধিকার প্রকাশক শব্দ যখন noun এর প– র্বে বসে adjective এর কাজ করে)
<u>This</u> book is expensive.	<u>Which</u> pen do you want?	<u>Each</u> boy will have a candy.	This is <u>my</u> book. That is <u>your</u> pen.

(e) Emphasizing Adjective :

যে Adjective দ্বারা জোর বা গুর" ত্ব বুঝায়, তাকে Emphasizing Adjective বলে। যেমন : This is the <u>very</u> boy who came first in the exam.

This is the <u>very</u> thing that I want.

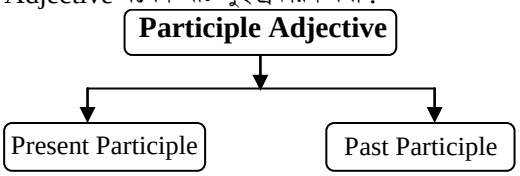
I have done this with my <u>own</u> hand.

(f) Proper Adjective :

Proper Noun হতে যে সকল Adjective গঠিত হয়, তাদেরকে Proper Adjective বলে। যেমন : I am a <u>Bangladeshi</u> citizen**.** Shuvo is an <u>Indian</u> citizen**.**

(g) Participle Adjective :

যে সকল Participle কোনো Noun-এর প– র্বে বসে Adjective-এর ন্যায় ব্যবহৃত হয়, তাদেরকে Participle Adjective বলে। এটি দুই প্রকার। যথা :



(i) Present Participle Adjective :

I saw a <u>running</u> train.

Do not disturb a <u>sleeping</u> baby.

এখানে running এবং sleeping শব্দ দুটি (verb+ing) participle এবং এরা যথাক্রমে train ও baby এই noun দুটোর গুণ বা অবস্থা প্রকাশ করছে। তাই এরা Present Participle Adjective। এক্ষেত্রে ঐ verb এর কাজ noun টি সম• াদন করে। উদাহরণে লক্ষ কর running train দ্বারা বোঝানো হয়েছে train is running আবার sleeping baby দ্বারা বোঝানো হয়েছে baby is sleeping.

Present Participle Adjective চেনার উপায় :

i) Noun এর প– র্বে বসে।

ii) এরা ing যুক্ত কিন্তু প– র্বে কোনো Auxiliary থাকে না

(ii) Past Participle Adjective :

It is a <u>destroyed</u> house.

He is an <u>educated</u> man. Jamal is not <u>pleased</u>**.**

উপরের বাক্যগুলোতে destroyed, educated ও pleased শব্দগুলো Verb-এর Past Participle এবং এরা যথাক্রমে house, man ও Jamal এই Noun গুলোর অবস্থা ও পরিচয় প্রকাশ করছে। তাই এগুলো Past Participle Adjective.

(h) Noun Adjective :

যখন কোনো Noun অন্য আরেকটি Noun-এর প– র্বে বসে Adjective-এর মত কাজ করে, তখন তাকে Noun Adjective বলে। যেমন : I will go to <u>fish</u> market now. Your <u>money</u> bag is very nice. That is a <u>railway</u> station.

উপরোক্ত উদাহরণগুলোতে fish, money এবং railway শব্দগুলো নিজেরাই Noun। তারা আবার অন্য Noun যথাক্রমে market, bag ও station-এর প– র্বে বসে Adjective-এর ন্যায় ব্যবহৃত হয়েছে। তাই এদেরকে Noun Adjective বলে।

Formation of Adjectives

Rule 1 : কিছু কিছু Noun এর শেষে ish, ful, ous, en, ly, able, al, ial, tive, less, ic, some ইত্যাদি যোগে Adjective গঠিত হয়।

Noun	Adjective
Boy	Boyish
Child	Childish
Hand	Handful
Beauty	Beautiful
Nerve	Nervous
Ambition	Ambitious
Gold	Golden
Cost	Costly
Man	Manly
Desire	Desirable
Pardon	Pardonable
Education	Educational
Office	Official
Attraction	Attractive
Sense	Senseless
Telegraph	Telegraphic
Hand	Handsome

Forms of Adjectives

Adjective-এর তিন প্রকার তারতম্য হয়ে থাকে। নিচের ছবিগুলি এবং তার পাশে লেখা বাক্যগুলো দেখ।



Robi is fat



Tom is fatter than Robi



John is the fattest boy.

☑ **Positive (তুলনাহীন অবস্থা) :**
প্রথম ছবিটিতে দেখা যাে" ছ রবি নামের একটি মোটা বালক। তাকে এখানে কারো সাথে তুলনা করা হয়নি। তাই adjective টির ম– ল form লেখা হয়েছে fat যাকে ইংরেজিতে positive degree বলা হয়।

☑ **Comparative (দুয়ের মধ্যে তুলনাবোধক অবস্থা):**
দ্বিতীয় ছবিটিতে দুটি বালকের ছবি রয়েছে। এখানে রবি মোটা এবং টম তার চেয়েও মোটা। তাই এখানে দুজনের মধ্যে তুলনা করার জন্য adjective টির ২য় form লেখা হয়েছে fatter যাকে ইংরেজিতে comparative degree বলা হয়। Comparative এর পরে 'than' বসে।

☑ **Superlative (দুয়ের অধিকের মধ্যে তুলনাবোধক অবস্থা) :**
তৃতীয় ছবিটিতে তিনটি বালকের ছবি রয়েছে। এই তিনজনের মধ্যে জন সবচেয়ে বেশি মোটা। আর এটা বোঝানোর জন্য adjective টির ৩য় form লেখা হয়েছে fattest যাকে ইংরেজিতে superlative degree বলা হয়। Superlative এর প– র্বে 'the' বসে।

Adjective-এর Degree পরিবর্তনের নিয়ম

1 এক syllable (উ" চারণে এক স্বরবর্ণ থাকে) বিশিষ্ট adjective-এর শেষে er যোগে comparative এবং est যোগে superlative করতে হয়।

Positive	Comparative	Superlative
low (লৌ)	low +er = lower	low + est = lowest
strong	stronger	strongest
soft	softer	softest

উল্লেখ্য, es, ing, ed-এগুলোর মত er, est-কে ইংরেজিতে suffix বলে এবং এগুলো কোনো শব্দের শেষে যোগ করলে অনেক সময় ম– ল শব্দের বানানে পরিবর্তন আসে।

(i) কোনো শব্দের শেষ তিন letter যথাক্রমে consonant, vowel, consonant (CVC) হলে ম– ল শব্দের শেষের letter-টি double হয়।

Positive	Comparative	Superlative
big	big +g + er = bigger	big + g + est = biggest

(ii) কোনো শব্দের শেষে e এবং তার প– র্বে consonant থাকলে e বাদ দিতে হয়।

Positive	Comparative	Superlative
fine	fin + er = finer	fin + est = finest
true	truer	truest

(iii) কোনো শব্দের শেষে y এবং তার প– র্বে consonant থাকলে y এর পরিবর্তে i বসবে।

Positive	Comparative	Superlative
pretty	pretti +er = prettier	pretti + est = prettiest
Heavy	Heavier	Heaviest

iv) কিন্তু y এর প– র্বে যদি vowel থাকে সেক্ষেত্রে y এর পরে er ও est যুক্ত হয়। যেমন–

Positive	Comparative	Superlative
Grey	Greyer	Greyest
Gay	Gayer	Gayest

2 দুই syllable (উ" চারণে দুই স্বরবর্ণ থাকে) বিশিষ্ট Adjective-এর শেষে le, y, er, ure, ow থাকলে বা negative un-যুক্ত adjective হলে, ঐ adjective-এর শেষে er যোগে comparative এবং est যোগে superlative করতে হয়।

Positive	Comparative	Superlative
mel lo**w** (মে লৌ)	mellow + er = mellower	mellow + est =mellowest
clev **er**	cleverer	cleverest
unhappy	unhappier	unhappiest

3 দুই বা দুই-এর অধিক syllable (উ" চারণে দুই বা দুই-এর অধিক স্বরবর্ণ থাকে) বিশিষ্ট adjective-এর প– র্বে more যোগে comparative এবং most যোগে superlative করতে হয়।

Positive	Comparative	Superlative
beau ti ful	more beautiful	most beautiful
Dan ger ous	more dangerous	most dangerous

4 কতগুলো adjective -এর ক্ষেত্রে নির্দিষ্ট কোনো নিয়ম অনুসরণ করা হয় না। যেমন:

Positive	Comparative	Superlative
good	better	best
bad, evil, ill	worse	worst
many (সংখ্যা)	more	most
much (পরিমাণ)	more	most

holycrossrajshahi.com

old	elder (একই পরিবারের সদস্য, than-এর সাথে কখনো ব্যবহার হয় না)/ older	eldest (একই পরিবারের সদস্য)/ oldest
little (পরিমাণ) few (সংখ্যা)	less fewer	least fewest

5. Junior, senior, anterior, posterior, inferior, superior, prior ইত্যাদি adjective গুলো latin ভাষা থেকে এসেছে। এগুলো সর্বদা Comparative Degree হিসেবে ব্যবহৃত হয় এবং এদের পর than এর পরিবর্তে to বসে। যেমন–

He is senior to me.

Practice

A. Pick out the adjectives in the following sentences.

(a) Kamal is a clever boy.
(b) She has a new, green dress.
(c) Dhaka is a large, busy city.
(d) This mango is sweet.
(e) He has bought a new bicycle.
(f) There are not many students in the class today.
(g) The day is fine.
(h) There is not much rain in Australia.

B. Fill in the blanks with suitable forms of adjectives.

(a) Rahim is the — boy in the class. (good)
(b) He is — than his sister. (small)
(c) She is — than his brother.(intelligent)
(d) Rima is — than her sister (happy)
(e) My son is — to me than my life. (dear)
(f) Iron is — than gold. (cheap)
(g) Gold is — than iron. (valuable)
(h) Raju is as — as Taju. (sincere)
(i) She is her father's — daughter. (old)
(j) Mr. Hakim is the — man in the village. (old)

C. Fill in the blanks with suitable adjectives from the box. Put them into correct form.

01.

great	fine	cunning	wise
fool	rough	nutritious	

(a) The rice of Dinajpur is — than that of Dhaka.
(b) She is — than a boy.
(c) No other food is as — as milk.
(d) Jim and Della were not — than the Magi.
(e) Runa Laila is a — singer.

Note : as... as এর মাঝে positive, than এর প– র্বে comparative এবং the এর পরে Superlative Degree বসবে।

02.

little	much	high	very	wicked	naughty	hard

(a) This sum is not as — as the earlier.
(b) Nipa is the — girl in the class.
(c) Jerry was not — than four.
(d) Mr. Khan is the — person in the village.
(e) Dr. Faruk draws the — salary in this office.

03.

fast	young	few	humorous
superior	large	small	

(a) My grandfather is — to yours in social status.
(b) Joya is the — of the two siblings.
(c) Abdul Hamid is — than any other man in the village.
(d) Australia has — people than Bangladesh.
(e) The Padma is the — river in Bangladesh.

04.

good	normal	glorious	tiny
tactful	easy	big	

(a) Ashish Babu is — than Zaman.
(b) Meherpur is the — zilla in Bangladesh.
(c) 21st February is — than many other days.
(d) He leads a — life than we do.
(e) He drives as — as the traffic rules say.

05.

senior	grave	sweet	blue
advance	black	careful	

(a) Shila is the — girl in her class.
(b) Deepti is — to me.
(c) She is not so — as her mother.
(d) Pecola longed for the — eye.
(e) Harrison Ford is — than any other of his age.

D. Fill in the gaps using adjectives from the boxes. There are more words than necessary.

01.

brave	pleasant	modern	heroic
sick	educative	shocked	

Florence Nightingale did not like easy and (a) — occupations of society; instead of going out to parties, she visited London Hospitals and studied how (b) — people were nursed back to health and strength. She was (c) — by the roughness and stupidity in those hospitals. She went out to Germany and France and learned there all she could about nursing. She returned to England and devoted herself to the hard task of improving the hospitals. Just then the Crimean War broke out. English soldiers went out singing to their death. But dreadful stories came home of wounded men being left to die. Everybody felt that something (d) — must be done to put a stop to the sufferings of the (e) — soldiers.

02.

widespread	educative	pleasant	wonderful
informative	sick	various	

Television is a (a) — invention of modern science. It has become the most common and (b) — source of entertainment. It has enriched our taste providing (c) — programmes through many channels. Almost every family has a television set today. There are many programmes which are (d) — and constructive. Several channels like the Discovery Channel and the National Geographic Channel telecast highly (e) — programmes. Satellite television has added a new dimension in our personal life. But it has also bad effect on our society and culture.

03.

comfortable	natural	various	essential
pleasant	worst	ecological	

Tree is one of the most (a) — components of our ecology. If no forest exists, there will be no man to live on earth. Trees provide us with oxygen without which there will be no tract of life on earth. Trees also provide us with fuel and furniture to make our life (b) — on earth. But man is destroying forests by cutting down trees. Only the destruction of forests can cause a serious (c) — imbalance. The recent recurrence of (d) — disaster all over the world may be the effect of ecological imbalance created by deforestation. We know that Bangladesh is the (e) — victim of natural disaster. So we need to plant more and more trees to save our country as well as the whole world.

04.

printed	individual	same	natural
electronic	worst	textual	

Electronic mail is known as e-mail. It is the communication of (a) — messages via electronic means. Though (b) — in nature, telex differs from e-mail. While telex communication is terminal to terminal, electronic mail communication is user to user via the computer. In telex, messages are destined to a number of users and then they are sent to the (c) — terminal from where messages are distributed in (d) — forms by an operator. On the other hand, e-mail is delivered to (e) — electronic mail boxes based in computers. So, privacy is ensured as the mail is delivered to an individual's mail box which can't be retrieved without knowing password.

05.

famous	natural	every	outstanding
prestigious	same	huge	

(a) — year the Nobel Prize is awarded for (b) — contribution to the fields of science, literature, economics and for the promotion of peace. It is regarded as one of the world's most (c) — prizes. If there is more than one recipient, the prize money is divided equally among the winners. The prize was instituted by Sir Alfred Nobel, the father of the science of destruction. Dynamite was invented by him. Selling dynamite he earned a (d) — sum of money and became (e) — all over the world.

06.

a few	meaningful	recent	famous
best	great	huge	

Amongst all the exhibitions, the book fairs are of (a) — origin. They are frequently held in towns and cities now. Last year I visited the Ekusey Boi Mela in Bangla Academy premises. There were a number of stalls and thousands of books were displayed . It was a (b) — opportunity of collecting a varied choice of books. In the fair, book lovers crowd there. I was tempted to buy a lot of books but my purse didn't permit me. So I bought (c) — books and had a lot of catalogues. However a book fair spreads the message that books are man's (d) — friends. Books enlarge our vision and make our life (e) —.

07.

a lot of	difficult	geographical	recent
famous	tropical	available	

Food habit of people differs from country to country because of (a) — position, climate and soil. People living in the (b) — countries eat (c) — fruits and vegetables. The people of Hawaii and Polynesia in the Pacific live on taro roots, bread, fruit and sea food. The chief foods of the Indians of Central America are fruits and vegetables because they get these things (d) —. The Eskimos eat meat and fish because it is too (e) — for them to grow vegetables in the regions which are covered with ice.

08.

distant	different	difficult	wonderful
available	modern	new	

Mobile phone is one of the (a) — gifts of (b) — science. It has added a (c) — dimension to our life and communication system. Through mobile phone, we can send massages to (d) — places, play games and sports, know about time, solve the work of calculation and be aware of (e) — kinds of news and views. At present, the popularity of mobile phone is increasing. In a very single moment, we can communicate with the people living in a very distant place by using it.

09.

necessary	disciplined	proper	difficult
incomplete	modern	important	

Good manners form an (a) — part of our education. Our education remains (b) — if we don't learn good manners. In our conduct with others we must have (c) — respect for them. We should have a sense of fitness in our behaviour with others. We should show respect to our

holycrossrajshahi.com

superiors. It is (d) — for a (e) — society. Good manners cost us nothing. So, good manners should be a part of our nature.

10.

different	disciplined	herbal	ancient
natural	proper	some	

People around the world are slowly changing their attitude towards medicine. More and more they are turning to (a) — cures. Natural cures are antidote to natural things, most of herbs and plants. History says that natural or (b) — remedies are nothing new. People used them all along in (c) — ages. Herbal medicines were used in (d) — civilizations like India, China, Greece, Egypt and Rome. Some ancient treatment is still in practice today. But in our society there are still (e) — malpractices in the name of treatment.

Answers

A. (a) clever (b) new, green (c) large, busy (d) This, sweet (e) new (f) many (g) fine (h) much

B. (a) best (b) smaller (c) more intelligent (d) happier (e) dearer (f) cheaper (g) more valuable (h) sincere (i) eldest (j) oldest

C. **01.** (a) finer (b) more cunning (c) nutritious (d) wiser (e) great

02. (a) hard (b) naughtiest (c) more (d) most wicked (e) highest

03. (a) superior (b) younger (c) more humorous (d) fewer (e) largest

04. (a) better (b) tiniest (c) more glorious (d) more normal (e) easy

05. (a) most careful/ sweetest (b) senior (c) advance/ careful (d) blue (e) graver

D.

01. (a) pleasant (b) sick (c) shocked (d) heroic (e) brave

02. (a) wonderful (b) widespread (c) various (d) educative (e) informative

03. (a) essential (b) comfortable (c) ecological (d) natural (e) worst

04. (a) textual (b) electronic (c) same (d) printed (e) individual

05. (a) Every(b) outstanding (c) prestigious (d) huge (e) famous

06. (a) recent (b) great (c) a few (d) best (e) meaningful

07. (a) geographical (b) tropical (c) a lot of (d) available (e) difficult

08. (a) wonderful (b) modern (c) new (d) distant (e) different

09. (a) important (b) incomplete (c) proper (d) necessary (e) disciplined

10. (a) natural (b) herbal (c) different (d) ancient (e) some

Verbs 6

ইংরেজি বাক্যের অত্যন্ত গুরুত্বপূর্ণ অংশ হচ্ছে Verb বা ক্রিয়া। একে Sentence-এর প্রাণকেন্দ্রও বলা হয়। Verb ছাড়া Sentence গঠিত হয় না। নিচের বাক্যগুলো লক্ষ কর :

Mr. Zaman is a teacher. He has a white cat. He is telling us about his cat. The cat has three legs.

উপরের Sentence গুলোতে underline করা শব্দগুলি Verb।

সংজ্ঞা : যে word দ্বারা কোনো কিছু করা, খাওয়া, থাকা ইত্যাদি বোঝায় তাকে Verb বলে।

মনে রাখবে, Verb সব সময় তিনটি বিষয় প্রকাশ করে:

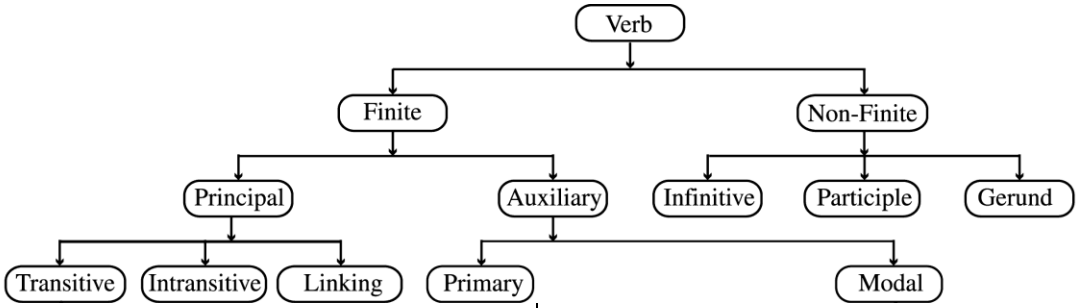
১. কোনো ব্যক্তি বা বস্তু কী হয়

২. কোনো ব্যক্তি বা বস্তু কী করে

৩. কোনো ব্যক্তি বা বস্তুর কী আছে

ইংরেজি Sentence-এ Verb-এর ব্যবহার নানাবিধ। তাই Verb কে বিভিন্ন ভাগে ভাগ করা হয়েছে। নিচের ছকটি লক্ষ কর।

Kinds of Verbs



Finite verb

যে verb-এর দ্বারা বাক্যের আসত্তির সমাপ্তি হয় তাকে finite verb বলে। Tense ও Subject এর Number ও Person অনুসারে এর রূপ পরিবর্তিত হয়। নিচের বাক্যগুলো লক্ষ কর-

I am eating rice.

He goes to school.

Finite Verb- কে আবার দু ভাগে ভাগ করা হয়েছে।

(a) Principal Verb

(b) Auxiliary Verb

(a) Principal/ Main Verb: যে verb এর নিজস্ব অর্থ-আছে এবং যেটি অন্য verb এর সাহায্য ছাড়াই সম্পূর্ণ অর্থ প্রকাশ করতে পারে তাকে Principal Verb বলে।

এটা বাক্যের প্রধান verb । এই verb-কে আবার তিন ভাগে ভাগ করা হয়েছে।

i. Transitive

ii. Intransitive

iii. Linking

(i) Transitive : যে verb-এর অর্থ object ছাড়া সম্প– র্ণ হয় না, তাকে Transitive verb বলে। যেমন, আমরা যদি বলি They brought out (তারা বের করল) তবে verb-টির অর্থ সম• – র্ণ হয় না; এবং তাই শ্রোতা প্রশ্ন করবে "কি বের করল?" উত্তর হতে পারে মিছিল (procession) যা বাক্যের object হিসেবে বসবে। অর্থাৎ 'brought out' verb-টি object ছাড়া অর্থ সম• – র্ণ করতে পারে না। এভাবে বাক্যটি হবে :

They brought out a procession.
I bought a shirt yesterday.
He gave me a pen.
He plays football well.

(ii) Intransitive : যে verb-এর অর্থ object ছাড়া সম্প– র্ণ হয়, তাকে Intransitive verb বলে।

Birds can fly.

উপরের বাক্যটিতে 'fly' verb টি object ছাড়া সম্প– র্ণ অর্থ প্রকাশ করেছে। 'কাকে' দিয়ে verb-টিকে প্রশ্ন করলে কোনো উত্তর আসে না। তাই 'fly' verb টি Intransitive verb।

(iii) Linking : যে verb-এর object না বসে complement বসে তাকে Linking verb বলে। মনে রাখবে, complement সব সময় noun/ noun phrase বা adjective হবে যা subject-কে বর্ণনা করে। এখানে verb-এর তেমন কোনো অর্থ থাকে না; verb-টি শুধুমাত্র subject ও complement-এর মাঝে সংযোগ স্থাপন করে। verb-টি কে বাদ দিলেও বক্তব্য বুঝা যায়।

Manzur is a doctor. Manzur doctor

উপরের বাক্যটিতে a doctor শব্দটি বাক্যের subject (Manzur) কে বর্ণনা করেছে এবং 'is' verb-টি'তেমন কোনো অর্থ বহন করছে না; এমনকি' is' verb-টি বাদ দিলেও বক্তব্য বোঝা যা" ছ। তাই 'is' verb-টি linking verb।

(b) Auxiliary Verbs/ Helping Verbs :

যে verb-এর নিজের কোনো অর্থ নেই এবং ম– ল verb-এর passive, tense, certainty, probability, obligation, permission ইত্যাদি form করতে সাহায্য করে তাকে auxiliary/ helping verb বলে। এই verb কে দুভাগে ভাগ করা যায়।

(i) Primary Auxiliaries
(ii) Modal Auxiliaries

মনে রাখবে, Helping verb-এর সাথে not যোগ করে negative বাক্য গঠন করা হয়। আবার Helping verb টি Subject এর প– র্বে বসিয়ে Interrogative বাক্য গঠন করা হয়। লক্ষ কর:

I am reading a book.	I am not reading a book.
	Am I reading a book?

(i) Primary Auxiliaries : verb-এর continuous, perfect, passive , negative এবং interrogative রূপ গঠনে যেসব helping/ auxiliary verb সাহায্য করে তাকে Primary Auxiliaries বলে। এই শ্রেণির verb হলো তিনটি: To be, to have, to do । নিচের উদাহরণগুলো লক্ষ কর:

I am writing a letter.
I have written a letter.
I do not want the pen.
Do I want the pen?

উপরের বাক্যগুলোতে am verb টি continuous tense গঠনে, have verb টি perfect tense গঠনে, do verb টি negative ও interrogative গঠনে সাহায্য করেছে তাই এগুলো Primary Auxiliaries।

Different Forms of BE Verb:

	Non-negative	Negative	Contracted
present	am (I এর সাথে বসে)	am not	aren't
	is (singular subject এর সাথে বসে)	is not	isn't
	are (plural subject এর সাথে বসে)	are not	aren't
past	was (singular subject এর সাথে বসে)	was not	wasn't
	were (plural subject এর সাথে বসে)	were not	weren't
ing	being	not being	
ed/ Participle	been	not been	

Different Forms of HAVE Verb:

	Non-negative	Negative	Contracted Negative
present	have (plural subject ও I এর সাথে বসে)	have not	haven't
	has (singular subject এর সাথে বসে)	has not	hasn't
past	had (সব subject এর সাথে বসে)	had not	hadn't
ing	having	not having	
ed/ participle	had		

Primary Auxiliary গুলো main verb হিসেবেও বাক্যে ব্যবহৃত হয়। তখন be verb টি 'হওয়া' অর্থে, have verb টি 'আছে' অর্থে এবং do verb টি 'করা' অর্থে ব্যবহার করা হয়। লক্ষ কর :

He is honest. I am honest. We are honest.
He has a pen. I have a pen.
I do the work. He did the work.

Practice

01. Make a list of Principal and Auxiliary verbs

a) He saw man. b) I am sorry. c) He opened the door. d) The boy is walking in the garden. e) Can you play chess? f) I have come to meet you. g) She sat down on the sofa. h) He dreamt a sweet dream.

02. Choose the right form of verbs.

(a) I am/is/are/have/has good at English.
(b) My brother am/is/are/have/has good at math.

(c) Where do/does you live?
(d) Where was/ were you yesterday?
(e) It has/ have been raining since morning.

03. Make the following sentences negative.
(a) They are players.
(b) Karim is a meritorious boy.
(c) Rana was playing football in the afternoon.
(d) Karim has written a letter.
(e) Mr. Ali is going to market.
(f) You are reading a book.
(g) Shefali will do the work.
(h) The boy is walking in the garden.
(i) The headmaster was present in the meeting.
(j) It has been raining since morning.

04. Make the following sentences interrogative.
(a) Rahim is going to school.
(b) You are writing a letter.
(c) Rana was playing football.
(d) They were swimming in the pond.
(e) She will do the work.
(f) Karim has written a letter.
(g) Kiron will do the sum.
(h) Sumon has read the book.
(i) Maruf will be a doctor.
(j) It has ben raining for two hours.

Answer

01. (a) saw – Principal verb
(b) am – Principal verb
(c) opened – Principal verb
(d) is – auxiliary verb. walking – Principal verb
(e) can– auxiliary verb. play – Principal verb
(f) have – auxiliary verb. come – Principal verb
(g) sat – Principal verb
(h) dreamt – Principal verb

02. (a) am (b) is (c) do (d) were (e) has

03. (a) They are not players.
(b) Karim is not a meritorious boy.
(c) Rana was not playing football in the afternoon.
(d) Karim has not written a letter.
(e) Mr. Ali is not going to market.
(f) You are not reading a book.
(g) Shefali won't do the work.
(h) The boy is not walking in the garden.
(i) The headmaster was not present in the meeting.
(j) It has not been raining since morning.

04. (a) Is Rahim not going to school?
(b) Are you not writing a letter?
(c) Was Rana not playing football?
(d) Were they not swimming in the pond?
(e) Will she not do the work?
(f) Has Karim not written a letter?
(g) Will Kiron not do the sum?
(h) Has Sumon not read the book?
(i) Will Maruf not be a doctor?
(j) Has it been raining for two hours?

(ii) <u>Modal Auxiliaries</u> :

যেসব Helping verb ম– ল verb-এর প– র্বে বসে ঐ verb-এর mood অর্থাৎ certainty বা probability বা possibility প্রকাশ করে তাকে modal auxiliaries বলে।

☑ Modals এর ঠিক পরবর্তী verb টি base form হয়।
Correct: She will <u>do</u> the work.
Incorrect: She will <u>does</u> the work.

☑ Modals এর সাথে কখনো s/es যোগ হয় না।
Correct: She <u>may</u> go there.
Incorrect: She <u>mays</u> go there.

Modals	***Uses***	***Examples***
Shall	future tense বুঝাতে ম– ল verb এর সাথে shall ব্যবহার করা হয়। এটা শুধুমাত্র 1st Person এ ব্যবহার করা যায়।	I <u>shall</u> go to bed now.
	প্রস্ত্যাব করতে বা মতামত চাইতে প্রশ্নবোধক বাক্যে shall ব্যবহার করা হয়।	<u>Shall</u> we go out for a walk?
Should/ Ought to	বর্তমান বা ভবিষ্যতে উচিৎ বা কর্তব্য প্রকাশ করার জন্য Should/ ought to ব্যবহার করা হয়। তবে ought to বেশি জোর প্রকাশ করে।	We <u>should</u> obey our parents. or, We <u>ought</u> to obey our parents.
	lest-যুক্ত বাক্যাংশে Should ব্যবহার করা হয়।	Work hard lest you <u>should</u> fail.
	অতীতে কোনো কিছু করা উচিৎ ছিল বা কর্তব্য ছিল বুঝাতে should have + verb এর past participle ব্যবহার করা হয়।	You <u>should</u> have gone there.
Will/ Would	ভবিষ্যতের কাজ বুঝাতে ম– ল verb এর সাথে will ব্যবহার করা হয়। এটা সব Person এ ব্যবহার করা যায়।	I <u>will</u> go to London. They <u>will</u> go to the meeting.
	বিনয়মিশ্রিত অনুরোধ বুঝাতে প্রশ্নবোধক বাক্যে will/ would ব্যবহার করা হয়।	<u>Would</u>/ <u>Will</u> you open the door?
	অতীতের অনিয়মিত অভ্যাস would বুঝাতে ব্যবহার করা হয়	I <u>would</u> often go to school late.
Would rather (বরং)	কোনো কিছুর প্রতি অধিক পছন্দ বুঝাতে would rather ব্যবহার করা হয়।	I <u>would rather</u> die than beg.
Must	নির্দেশ বুঝাতে	You <u>must</u> come to school by 8 am.
	বাধ্যবাধকতা বুঝাতে	My examination will start tomorrow. I <u>must</u> go home now.
	জানা তথ্য থেকে সংগত অতীতের ঘটনা অনুমান করতে must have + verb	The road is wet. It <u>must have</u> rained last night.

	এর past participle ব্যবহার করা হয়।	
Have to	বাধ্যবাধকতা বুঝাতে	We have to learn English.
Can	কোনো কিছু করার ক্ষমতা বা সামর্থ্য আছে বুঝাতে	Raima can play football.
	অনুমতি চাওয়া বা অনুমতি দেয়া অর্থে can ব্যবহার করা হয়। তবে may শব্দটিও ব্যবহার করা যায় এবং এটি বেশি formal	Son: Can I come in, mom? Mother: Yes, you can.
Could	বিনয়মিশ্রিত অনুরোধ বুঝাতে প্রশ্নবোধক বাক্যে ব্যবহার	Could you lend me your camera?
May	অনুমতি চাওয়া বা অনুমতি দেয়া অর্থে may ব্যবহার করা হয়। এটা can এর চেয়ে ভদ্রোচিত।	Student: May I come in sir? Teacher: Yes, you may.
	ভবিষ্যত সম্বন্ধে অনুমান প্রকাশ করতে	The sky is cloudy. It may rain.
	আশীর্বাদ প্রকাশ করতে Optative Sentence-এ ব্যবহার	May you live long.
Might	ভবিষ্যত সম্বন্ধে অনুমান প্রকাশ করতে Might ব্যবহার করা হয়। তবে এটা বেশি অনিশ্চয়তা প্রকাশ করে।	The sky is somewhat cloudy. It might rain.
Need	সাধারণত প্রয়োজন নেই অর্থে না-বোধক বাক্যে ব্যবহার করা হয়।	Yo need not go there.
Dare	কোনো কিছু করার ধৃষ্টতা বা সাহস বুঝাতে	He dare not tell a lie.
Used to	অতীতের অভ্যাস বুঝাতে	I used to sleep in the afternoon.
be to	কোনো কাজ 'করতে হয়'– এরূপ বোঝাতে	I am to go to Dhaka tomorrow.
be going to	ভবিষ্যতে কোনো কিছু করার ই" ছা বুঝাতে	I am going to study medicine.
had better (বরং)	কোনো কিছু করা ভাল এমন ধারণা প্রকাশ করতে	You are tired. You had better take rest.

Practice

01. Rewrite the sentences using modal auxiliaries.
(a) He — run three miles at a stretch. (b) I — swim in the river in my childhood. (c) — I come in, sir? (d) I am sure I — get A+. (e) We — obey our parents.

02. (a) She will — do the work. (b) She — go there. (c) You — do the work. (d) — I come in, sir? (e) — you swim?

03. (a) The builders — finish the job today. (b) I — not stay long. (c) I tried to explain but nobody — listen. (d) She — speak Russian. (e) We — go by bus.

04. (a) If you take this tablet you — be all right. (b) We really — go now. (c) I — walk two miles in the morning. (d) I — go now. (e) He is — to smoking.

05. (a) We — go home tomorrow. (b) You — do your duty. (c) They — obey the rules of the country. (d) The headmaster — preside over the meeting. (e) I — die than beg.

06. (a) I — swim. (b) He — not tell a lie. (c) I — go home now. (d) It — rain today. (e) You — not go there.

07. (a) — we go out for a walk? (b) We — obey our parents. (c) We — learn English. (d) — you lend me your camera? (e) He — come today.

08. (a) I — sleep in the afternoon. (b) You — take rest. (c) — you live long. (d) I — often go to school late. (e) Work hard lest you — fail.

09. (a) Students — go to picnic in winter. (b) You — see a doctor. (c) You — not have bought me a shirt. (d) Rana — walk in the morning. (e) Jony — play cricket well.

10. (a) She — go there. (b) we — learn English. (c) Every man — die. (d) Birds — fly. (e) Shahin — not speak French.

Answers

01. (a) can (b) used to (c) May (d) will (e) should/ must
02. (a) have to (b) may (c) should (d) May (e) can
03. (a) must (b) shall (c) would (d) can (e) could
04. (a) shall (b) must (c) used to (d) had better (e) used to
05. (a) shall (b) should (c) must (d) will (e) would rather
06. (a) can (b) must (c) shall (d) might (e) need
07. (a) Shall (b) should (c) must (d) Could (e) may
08. (a) used to (b) must (c) May (d) would (e) should
09. (a) will (b) must (c) need (d) used to (e) can
10. (a) may (b) must (c) must (d) can (e) can

Non-finite verb

যে Verb নিজে বাক্যের অর্থ সম• – র্ণ করতে পারে না এবং Subject-এর নিকট দায়বদ্ধ নয় অর্থাৎ Subject এর Number ও Person অনুসারে যার রূপ পরিবর্তিত হয় না, তাকে Non-finite Verb বলে। যেমন :
Hasan wants to play cricket.
The girl went away laughing.
Let me go home.
উপরোক্ত উদাহরণগুলোতে to play, laughing এবং go হল Non-finite Verb. Subject-এর Number ও Person পরিবর্তিত হলেও এগুলোর রূপ পরিবর্তিত হয় না। Non-Finite Verb গুলো তিন ভাগে বিভক্ত :
(i) Infinitive
(ii) Participle
(iii) Gerund

(i) Infinitive: সাধারণত to-যুক্ত verb কে Infinitive বলে। এটা বাক্যে subject বা object বা Complement বা adverbial হিসাবে ব্যবহৃত হয়।
Arif goes to play football.
I want to help you.

Note : কখনো কখনো to উহ্য থাকে।
I saw him **go.**

(ii) Participle : Verb-এর ing form বা past participle

holycrossrajshahi.com

form যখন একই সাথে verb এবং adjective-এর কাজ করে তখন তাকে Participle বলে। মনে রাখবে, Participle কোনো Noun/ Pronoun এর আগে বা পরে বসে তার সম্বন্ধে বর্ণনা দেয়।

A barking dog seldom bites.
I saw him crossing the road.
He repaired the broken chair.
People removed the trees fallen on the street.

উপরের বাক্যগুলোতে barking শব্দটি dog কে, crossing শব্দটি him কে, broken শব্দটি chair কে এবং fallen শব্দটি trees কে বর্ণনা করে adjective এর কাজ করছে তাই এগুলো Participle ।

(iii) Gerund : verb-এর ing form যখন বাক্যে Subject বা Object হিসেবে বসে একই সাথে Noun এবং Verb এর কাজ করে তখন তাকে Gerund বলে।

Walking is a good exercise.
I like swimming in the pond.
I am fond of eating rice in the morning.

অনেকে Present Participle ও Gerund কে মিলিয়ে ফেলে। মনে রাখবে, Present Participle বাক্যে adjective-এর কাজ করে কিন্তু Gerund বাক্যে Noun-এর কাজ করে।

Practice

01. Make the list of finite and non-finite verbs.

(a) They want to play football. (b) Seeing is believing. (c) Walking keeps you fit. (d) If she tried, she could succeed. (e) I saw him crossing the road. (f) He learns how to speak English. (g) You visited your home town. (h) They are trying to do well. (i) Salam took the book with him. (j) He repaired the broken chair. (k) Walking is a good exercie. (l) Each of the two boys is good. (m) Every man wants to be happy in life. (n) I am going to buy a computer to night. (o) My father served in a private company. (p) People removed the trees fallen on the street. (q) Many people were killed in the war. (r) He was beaten severely. (s) I sold my mobile phone yesterday. (t) Father has given me a shirt.

02. Find out the gerunds and the participles.

(a) A barking dog seldom bites. (b) Walking is a good exercise. (c) He came to me smiling. (d) I like playing football. (e) I am fond of reading story books. (f) I found the letter printed. (g) I saw him going to market. (h) I like reading poetry. (i) My hobby is listening music. (j) Feeding the baby, the woman started working again. (k) Drinking pure water is a must. (l) He threw a stone at the sleeping dog. (m) This is a charming scenery. (n) We have some passengers waiting here. (o) I saw him playing football. (p) He was seen playing piano. (q) Having got the letter, I stopped writing. (r) The sun having set, we went home. (s) With a disgusted mood, he rebuked his brother. (t) A burnt man was indentified.

03. Use each of the following verbs as finite and non-finite verbs. One is done for you.

Help: He helps me. He wants to help me.

(a) receive (b) understand (c) keep (d) sing (e) think (f) know (g) create (h) bring (i) enter (j) make (k) decide (l) allow (m) permit (n) see (o) take (p) request (q) invite (r) start (s) go (t) cry

Answer

01. (a) want – finite verb, to play – non-finite verb
(b) seeing – non-finite, believing – non-finite
(c) walking – non-finite, keeps – finite
(d) tried – finite, could succeed – finite
(e) saw – finite, crossing – non-finite
(f) learns – finite, to speak – non-finite
(g) visited – finite
(h) are trying – finite, to do – non-finite
(i) took – finite
(j) repaired – finite
(k) walking – non-finite, is – finite
(l) is – finite
(m) wants – finite, to buy – non-finite
(n) am going – finite, to buy – non-finite
(o) served – finite,
(p) removed – finite, fallen – non-finite
(q) were killed – finite
(r) was beaten – finite
(s) sold – finite
(t) has given – finite

02. (a) barking – participle
(b) walking – Gerund
(c) smiling – participle
(d) playing – Gerund
(e) reading – Gerund
(f) printed – participle
(g) going – participle
(h) reading – Gerund
(i) listening – Participle
(j) feeding – Participles
(k) drinking – Gerund
(l) sleeping – Participle
(m) charming – Participle
(n) waiting – Participle
(o) playing – Participle
(p) playing – Participle
(q) having – Participle
(r) having – Participle
(s) disgusted – Participle
(t) burnt – Participle

03. (a) I received the letter yesterday. He was shocked receiving the letter.
(b) Did you understand what I said? He made me understand the math.
(c) Exercise keeps us feet. I started keeping diary.
(d) He sings well. He wants to sing a song.
(e) I will think about it. I have to think about it.
(f) He knows about you. Knowing fact, I left the place.
(g) Allah has created us. They wanted to create hue and cry here.

(h) I bring the cat here. Bringing a bucket full of water, they started working.
(i) The teacher entered the classroom. We were waiting for his entering into the hall.
(j) You made a nice basket. They left the place making everyone strange.
(k) I decide to meet him tomorrow. He was so late to decide what to do.
(l) Teacher allowed me to do so. You did not do well allowing him to do it.
(m) His father does not permit him to play. You have been ordered to permit me to go there.
(n) I saw him there. I was so happy to see him.
(o) He took the decision. Taking the money, they left my home.
(p) You requested him for this. He wanted to request you but I forbade him.
(q) We have been invited for the function. Don't you want to invite Arif?
(r) They started working. You should be serious to start the work as soon as possible.
(s) He goes to market. Going to market, he bought a book.
(t) The child is crying. I saw the boy crying.

Conjugation of Verbs 7

ইংরেজিতে verb গুলোর যথারীতি তিনটি Form বা গঠন বা আকৃতি আছে। যেমন : Base form, Past form এবং Past Participle form.

Verb গুলোর রূপগত পরিবর্তন দুইভাবে হয়। এই রূপগত পরিবর্তনের ধরন অনুসারে Verb গুলোকে দুটি শ্রেণিতে বিভক্ত করা হয়। যথা–

1. Strong Verb বা Irregular Verb
2. Weak Verb বা Regular Verb

এবার নিচের বাক্যগুলো লক্ষ করা যাক–

Father has **given** me a nice shirt.
He **gave** me some money.
Many people were **killed** in the war.
He has **killed** a tiger.

উপরের প্রথম দুটি বাক্যে 'Give'-এই Verb এর Past এবং Past Participle-এর রূপ আলাদা আলাদা (gave ও given); কিন্তু পরের দুটি বাক্যে 'Kill'-এই Verbটির Past ও Past Participle রূপ (killed ও killed) একই।

এভাবে, **যে Verb এর ভিতরের Vowel পরিবর্তন করে বা কমিয়ে Past ও Past Participle গঠন করা হয়, তাকে Strong Verb বলে।**

এসব Verb এর Past ও Past Participle এ রূপান্তরের কোনো regular pattern নেই বলে এগুলোকে Irregular Verbও বলে।

অন্যদিকে, **যে Verb এর শেষে ed, d বা t প্রভৃতি যোগ করে Past ও Past Participle গঠন করা হয়, তাকে Weak Verb বলে।**

এসব Verb এর Past ও Past Participle গঠনে একটি Regular Pattern আছে বলে Regular Verbও বলে।

নিচে কতকগুলো Strong Verb এর Past ও Past Participle রূপ দেখানো হলো :

Strong Verbs :

Base Form	*Past Form*	*Past Participle Form*
Awake (জাগা)	awoke	awoken
Be (হওয়া) (am, is, are)	was /were	been
Beat (প্রহার করা)	beat	beaten
Become (হওয়া)	became	become
Begin (শুর" করা)	began	begun
Bend (বাঁকানো)	bent	bent

Base Form	*Past Form*	*Past Participle Form*
Bet (বাজি ধরা)	bet	bet
Bid (নিলাম ডাকা)	bid	bid
Bite (কামড়ানো)	bit	bitten/bit
Blow (প্রবাহিত হওয়া)	blew	blown
Break (ভাঙ্গা)	broke	broken
Bring (আনা)	brought	brought
Broadcast (প্রচার করা)	broadcast	broadcast
Build (তৈরি করা)	built	built
Burst (ফেটে পড়া)	burst	burst
Buy (কেনা)	bought	bought
Catch (ধরা)	caught	caught
Choose (বেছে নেয়া)	chose	chosen
Come (আসা)	came	come
Cut (কাটা)	cut	cut
Deal (ব্যবহার করা)	dealt	dealt
Dig (খনন করা)	dug	dug
Do (করা)	did	done
Draw (আকর্ষণ করা)	drew	drawn
Drink (পান করা)	drank	drunk
Drive (গাড়ি চালানো)	drove	driven
Eat (খাওয়া)	ate	eaten
Feel (অনুভব করা)	felt	felt
Fight (যুদ্ধ করা)	fought	fought
Find (খুঁজে পাওয়া)	found	found
Fly (উড়া)	flew	flown
Forget (ভুলে যাওয়া)	forgot	forgotten
Forgive (ক্ষমা করা)	forgave	forgiven
Get (পাওয়া)	got	got
Give (দেওয়া)	gave	given
Go (যাওয়া)	went	gone
Grow (জন্মানো)	grew	grown
Have (থাকা)	had	had
Hear (শুনা)	heard	heard
Hold (ধরা)	held	held

Base Form	*Past Form*	*Past Participle Form*
Keep (রাখা)	kept	kept
Know (জানা)	knew	known
Leave (ত্যাগ করা)	left	left
Let (অনুমতি দেয়া)	let	let
Lose (হারানো)	lost	lost
Make (তৈরি করা)	made	made
Meet (দেখা করা)	met	met
Pay (পরিশোধ করা)	paid	paid
Read (পড়া)	read	read
Rise (উঠা)	rose	risen
Say (বলা)	said	said
See (দেখা)	saw	seen
Sell (বিক্রি করা)	sold	sold
Send (পাঠানো)	sent	sent
Shake (ঝাঁকানো)	shook	shaken
Shut (বন্ধ করা)	shut	shut
Sink (ডুবা)	sank	sunk
Steal (চুরি করা)	stole	stolen
Swim (সাঁতার কাটা)	swam	swum
Take (নেওয়া)	took	taken
Teach (শিক্ষা দেওয়া)	taught	taught
Tell (বলা)	told	told
Think (চিন◌্তা করা)	thought	thought
Wake (জাগানো)	woke	woken
Wear (পরিধান করা)	wore	worn
Weep (কাঁদা)	wept	wept
Win (জয়লাভ করা)	won	won
Write (লেখা)	wrote	written

নিচের Verbগুলোর Past ও Past Participle Form প্রায়ই বিভ্রান◌্তির সৃষ্টি করে। তাই এগুলোর বিভিন্ন রূপ বিশেষভাবে লক্ষণীয়।

Base	*Past Form*	*Past Participle*
Awake (জাগ্রত করা/হওয়া)	awoke	awoken
Awaken (জাগানো)	awakened	awakened
Hang (ঝুলানো)	hung	hung
Hang (ফাঁসি দেয়া)	hanged	hanged
Die (মারা যাওয়া)	died	died
Lie (শোয়া)	lay	lain
Lie (মিথ্যা কথা বলা)	lied	lied
Lay (ডিম পাড়া)	laid	laid
Beat (প্রহার করা)	beat	beaten
Bite (কামড়ানো)	bit	bitten/bit
Bear (বহন করা)	bore	borne
Bear (প্রসব করা)	bore	born
Compete (প্রতিযোগিতা করা)	competed	competed
Complete (সম• – র্ণ করা)	completed	completed
Fall (পতিত হওয়া)	fell	fallen
Feel (অনুভব করা)	felt	felt
Fill (প– র্ণ করা)	filled	filled
Fail (ব্যর্থ হওয়া)	failed	failed
Leave (পরিত্যাগ করা)	left	left
Live (বাস করা)	lived	lived
Lay (শোয়ানো, রাখা)	laid	laid
Loose (আলগা করা)	loosed	loosed
Lose (হারানো)	lost	lost
Raise (তোলা)	raised	raised
Rise (ওঠা)	rose	risen
Sew (সেলাই করা)	sewed	sewn
Sow (বীজ বোনো)	sowed	sowed/sown
Show (দেখানো)	showed	shown
Strike (আঘাত করা)	struck	struck
Stroke (মৃদু আঘাত করা)	stroked	stroked

Weak Verbs/ Regular Verbs :

Rule : কিছু কিছু verb এর শেষে 'ed' যোগ করে Past ও Past Participle করা হয়।

Base	*Past*	*Past Participle*
Add (যোগ করা)	added	added
Appear (উপস্থিত হওয়া)	appeared	appeared
Ask (জিজ্ঞেস করা)	asked	asked
Allow (গ্রহণ করা/ অনুমতি দেয়া)	allowed	allowed
Boil (সিদ্ধ করা)	boiled	boiled
Borrow (ধার করা)	borrowed	borrowed
Climb (আরোহণ করা)	climbed	climbed
Clean (পরিষ্কার করা)	cleaned	cleaned
Discuss (আলোচনা করা)	discussed	discussed
Delay (দেরি করা)	delayed	delayed
Fail (ব্যর্থ হওয়া)	failed	failed
Fix (নির্দিষ্ট করা)	fixed	fixed
Fill (প– র্ণ করা)	filled	filled
Enjoy (উপভোগ করা)	enjoyed	enjoyed
Help (সাহায্য করা)	helped	helped
Jump (লাফ দেয়া)	jumped	jumped
Kill (হত্যা করা)	killed	killed
Laugh (হাসা)	laughed	laughed
Need (দরকার হওয়া)	needed	needed
Obey (মান্য করা)	obeyed	obeyed
Pass (পাশ করা)	passed	passed
Play (খেলা করা)	played	played
Pull (টানা)	pulled	pulled
Push (ঠেলা)	pushed	pushed

Punish (শাস্তি দেয়া)	punished	punished
Reach (পৌঁছানো)	reached	reached
Rain (বৃষ্টি হওয়া)	rained	rained
Show (দেখানো)	showed	showed
Sow (বপন করা)	sowed	sowed/sown
Thank (ধন্যবাদ দেয়া)	thanked	thanked
Wait (অপেক্ষা করা)	waited	waited
Wash (ধৌত করা)	washed	washed
Wish (ইচ্ছা করা)	wished	wished
Walk (হাঁটা)	walked	walked
Work (কাজ করা)	worked	worked

Rule : শেষে 'e' থাকলে 'd' যোগ করে Past ও Past Participle করতে হয়।

Base	***Past***	***Past Participle***
Agree (সম্মত হওয়া)	agreed	agreed
Arrive (পৌঁছানো)	arrived	arrived
Arrange (গোছানো)	arranged	arranged
Advise (উপদেশ দেয়া)	advised	advised
Close (বন্ধ করা)	closed	closed
Change (পরিবর্তন করা)	changed	changed
Compare (তুলনা করা)	compared	compared
Die (মারা যাওয়া)	died	died
Dance (নৃত্য করা)	danced	danced
Divide (ভাগ করা)	divided	divided
Gaze (একদৃষ্টে তাকিয়ে থাকা)	gazed	gazed
Hate (ঘৃণা করা)	hated	hated
Hope (আশা করা)	hoped	hoped
Live (বাস করা)	lived	lived
Love (ভালবাসা)	loved	loved
Move (নড়া)	moved	moved

ব্যতিক্রম : কতগুলো verb এর অভ্যন্তরীণ vowel পরিবর্তন করে 'd' যোগ করতে হয়।

Base	***Past***	***Past Participle***
Flee (পলায়ন করা)	fled	fled
Have (আছে/থাকা)	had	had
Hear (শোনা)	heard	heard
Sell (বিক্রি করা)	sold	sold

Rule : কোনো verb এর শেষ অক্ষরটি consonant হলে এবং তার পূর্বে single vowel থাকলে শেষ অক্ষরটির দ্বিত্ব হয়ে ed যোগে Past ও Past Participle করতে হয়।

Base	***Past***	***Past Participle***
Beg (ভিক্ষা করা)	begged	begged
Drop (ফেলে দেয়া)	dropped	dropped
Travel (ভ্রমণ করা)	travelled	travelled
Plan (পরিকল্পনা করা)	planned	planned
Stop (থামানো)	stopped	stopped

Rule : কোনো verb এর শেষে y থাকলে এবং তার পূর্বে consonant থাকলে y টি বাদ যায় এবং ied যোগ করতে হয়।

Base	***Past***	***Past Participle***
Bury (কবরস্থ করা)	buried	buried
Cry (কাঁদা)	cried	cried
Hurry (তাড়াহুড়া করা)	hurried	hurried
Carry (বহন করা)	carried	carried
Dry (শুকানো)	dried	dried
Try (চেষ্টা করা)	tried	tried
Marry (বিবাহ করা)	married	married

কিন্তু, 'y' এর পূর্বে vowel থাকলে y বাদ যাবে এবং 'id' যোগ করতে হবে।

Base	***Past***	***Past Participle***
Lay	laid	laid
Pay	paid	paid
Say	said	said

Rule : কিছু verb এর শেষে t যোগ করে Past ও Past Participle করতে হবে।

Base	***Past***	***Past Participle***
Bend (নোয়ানো)	bent	bent
Burn (পোড়ানো)	burnt	burnt
Catch (ধরা)	caught	caught
Bring (আনা)	brought	brought
Buy (কেনা)	bought	bought
Fight (যুদ্ধ করা)	fought	fought
Teach (শেখানো)	taught	taught
Keep (রাখা)	kept	kept
Sleep (ঘুমানো)	slept	slept
Think (চিন্তা করা)	thought	thought
Build (নির্মাণ করা)	built	built
Feel (অনুভব করা)	felt	felt
Learn (শেখা)	learnt	learnt
Lend (ধার দেয়া)	lent	lent
Send (পাঠানো)	sent	sent
Spend (ব্যয় করা)	spent	spent

Tense 8

Tense : Verb (ক্রিয়া) সম্পন্ন হওয়ার সময়কে Tense বলে। Tense প্রধানত তিন প্রকার। যথা :

(i) Present Tense (বর্তমান কাল)
(ii) Past Tense (অতীত কাল)
(iii) Future Tense (ভবিষ্যৎ কাল)

Present Tense

Verb বা ক্রিয়া যখন বর্তমান কালের কোনো কাজ সম্পন্ন করে তখন তাকে Present Tense বা বর্তমান কাল বলে। Present Tense কে চার ভাগে ভাগ করা যায়। যথা :

(i) Present Simple/ Indefinite Tense

(ii) Present Continuous/ Progressive Tense
(iii) Present Perfect Tense
(iv) Present Perfect Continuous

Present Simple/ Indefinite Tense

চেনার উপায় :
বাংলা ক্রিয়ার শেষে ই, ও, য়, আ অর্থাৎ খাই, খাও, খায়, খা ইত্যাদি থাকবে।
গঠনপ্রণালি :

Sub +ম– ল verb এর S Form / Base Form + বাকী অংশ
১. আমি ভাত খা**ই** → I eat rice.
২. তুমি ভাত খা**ও** → You eat rice.
৩. সে ভাত খা**য়** → He eats rice.

ব্যবহারের ক্ষেত্র :
☑ সাধারণত যে কাজটি সব সময় (always) হয়, মাঝে মাঝে (sometimes/ now and then) হয়, প্রায়ই (often) হয়, প্রতিদিন (everyday/ daily) হয়, নিয়মিত (regularly) হয়, তা Present Simple Tense।
এই Tense এ verb এর **S Form** বা **Base Form** হয়।
S Form :
subject টি 3rd person ও singular number হলে ম– ল verb এর সাথে s/es যোগ করতে হয়।
Base Form :
অন্যান্য ক্ষেত্রে base form (ম– ল রূপ) বসবে। মনে রাখবে,
আমি (I), আমরা (we)
তুমি (you), তোমরা (you) ছাড়া,
ভবে আছে যারা
3rd person তারা।
এবার, verb এর কোন রূপ ব্যবহৃত হবে তা (☼) চিহ্ন দ্বারা দেখাও। প্রথমটি করে দেয়া হলো।

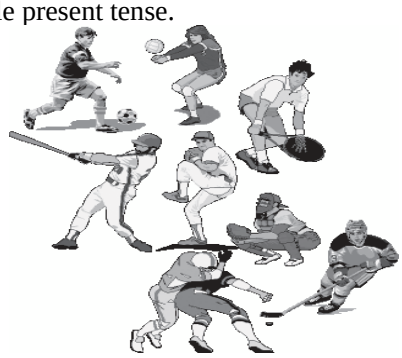
১. আমি খাই = I ☼ eat/ eats
২. সে খায় = He/ She ☼ eat/ eats
৩. তুমি খাও = You ☼ eat/ eats
৪. তোমরা খাও = You ☼ eat/ eats
৫. তারা খায় = They ☼ eat/ eats
৬. আমরা খাই = We ☼ eat/ eats
৭. সেতু খায় = Setu ☼ eat/ eats
৮. সেতু ও মিতু খায় = Setu and Mitu ☼ eat/ eats

Note : Negative করার সময় খেয়াল রাখতে হবে যদি সাহায্যকারী verb (am/ is/ are) থাকে তবে ঐ সাহায্যকারী verb-এর সাথে not যোগ করতে হবে; আর যদি সাহায্যকারী verb (am/ is/ are) না থাকে তবে ম– ল verb এর প– র্বে do not/ does not দিয়ে negative করতে হবে।
▲ একজনের ক্ষেত্রে is ▲ একজনের ক্ষেত্রে does
▲ একাধিকের ক্ষেত্রে are ▲ একাধিকের ক্ষেত্রে do
▲ I এর ক্ষেত্রে am ▲ I, You এর ক্ষেত্রে do
এবার তাহলে নিচের তালিকায় সঠিক শব্দে (☼) বসাও।
১. আমি খেলি না = I do not/ does not/ is not/ are not/ am not ☼ play.
২. তুমি খেল না = You do not/ does not/ is not/ are not/ am not ☼ play.
৩. সে সুখী না = He do not/ does not/ is not/ are not/ am not ☼ happy.
৪. সে খেলে না = He do not/ does not/ is not/ are not/ am not ☼ play.
৫. তারা সুখী না = They do not/ does not/ is not/ are not/ am not ☼ happy.
৬. তারা খেলে না = They do not/ does not/ is not/ are not/ am not ☼ play.
৭. তুমি সুখী না = You do not/ does not/ is not/ are not/ am not ☼ happy.
৮. সে খেলে না = She do not/ does not/ is not/ are not/ am not ☼ play.
৯. আমি সুখী না = I do not/ does not/ is not/ are not/ am not ☼ happy.
১০. আমরা খেলি না = We do not/ does not/ is not/ are not/ am not ☼ play.

☑ চিরন্তন সত্য (Universal Truth) ঘটনা প্রকাশ করতে Present Indifinite Tense হয়।
i) The earth moves round the sun.
ii) Ice floats on water.
iii) One and one make two.

EXERCISE:
Translate into English :
১. আমি একজন নাগরিক—I am a citizen.
২. তারা কৃষক—They are farmers.
৩. তারা ছাত্র—They are students.
৪. আমরা খেলোয়াড়—We are players.
৫. সে একজন প্রার্থী—She is a candidate.

Exercise:
B. Complete the following conversation in the simple present tense.
Shila : *(you/ like) cricket, Ashish?*
Ashish : *I (not/ like) cricket but I (like) football a lot.*
Shila : *I (not/ like) football myself. In fact it (not/ make)sense to me.*
Ashish : *(you/ like) cricket, then?*
Shila : *It's a wonderful game. Who (not/ like) it?*
Ashish : *I (not/ like) it. I (not/ understand) how it (interest)people.*
Shila : *it/ bore) you?*
Ashish : *Yes, it (bore) me. I (find) it a complete waste of time.*
D. Write a few paragraphs about your favourite game. Explain the rules used in the game.
E. Write a paragraph about your hobby.
F. Write a conversation on a topic of your choice. Use the simple present tense.



Present Continuous/ Progressive Tense

holycrossrajshahi.com

চেনার উপায় :
বাংলা ক্রিয়ার শেষে তেছ, তেছি, তেছে, তেছেন, অর্থাৎ করছি, করছিস, করছে ইত্যাদি থাকবে।
গঠনপ্রণালি :
Subject + am, is,are + verb এর ম– ল form এর সাথে ing + বাকী অংশ
১. আমি ভাত খাই**তেছি**/খাি" ছ → I am eating rice.
২. তুমি ভাত খাই**তেছ**/খাে" ছ → You are eating rice.
৩. সে ভাত খাই**তেছে**/খাে" ছ → He is eating rice.
ব্যবহারের ক্ষেত্র:
☑ কোনো কাজ এই মুহ– র্তে হ" ছ বা চলছে এমন বুঝাতে Present Continuous Tense হয়। এক্ষেত্রে সাধারণত Now, at present, at this moment, gradually, day by day, Look!, Listen!, Stop!, Hush! ইত্যাদি উল্লেখ থাকে।
এখন এটা সম্বন্ধে আমি তোমাকে লিখছি-I am writing to you about it now.
এখন অন্ধকার হ" ছ-It is getting dark now.
বর্তমানে সে বিদেশে কাজ করছে-At present she is working abroad.
☑ উপর্যুক্ত নিয়মের ক্ষেত্রে Verb টি যদি non-continuous হয় তবে তা Present Continuous Tense না হয়ে Present Simple Tense হবে। Non-continuous verb গুলো হ" ছ :

Know (জানা), Believe (বিশ্বাস করা), hear (শোনা), see (দেখা), smell (বিশেষ ঘ্রান থাকা), wish (আশা করা), understand (বুঝা), hate (ঘৃণা করা), love (ভালোবাসা), like (পছন্দ করা), want (চাওয়া), sound (শব্দ করা), have (থাকা/ আছে), need (প্রয়োজন হওয়া), appear (মনে হওয়া), seem (মনে হওয়া), taste (বিশেষ স্বাদ থাকা), own (অধিকারী হওয়া), be, become

আমি এখন সুখী-I am happy now.
আমি এখন তাকে অপছন্দ করি।-I dislike him now.
আমি আরও আরও টাকা চাই।-I want more and more money.

Note to remember:
▲ একজনের ক্ষেত্রে is
▲ একাধিকের ক্ষেত্রে are
▲ I এর ক্ষেত্রে am

এবার নিচের বাক্যগুলোতে সঠিক auxiliary/ helping verb-টি বাছাই কর।
১. আমি ফুটবল খেলছি = I am/ is/ are playing football.
২. সে গল্প বলছে = She am/ is/ are telling a story.
৩. তিনি সাঁতরা" ছন = He am/ is/ are swimming.
৪. তোমরা খেলা করছ = You am/ is/ are playing.
৫. মা ভাত রান্না করছেন = Mother am/ is/ are cooking rice.
৬. আমরা হাঁটছি = We am/ is/ are walking.
৭. আমি চিন্ত্রা করছি = I am/ is/ are thinking.
৮. তারা যুদ্ধ করছে = They am/ is/ are fighting.
৯. রীণা স্বপ্ন দেখছে = Rina am/ is/ are dreaming.

EXERCISE

A. Look at each picture and write what is happening.



B Complete the conversation.
Sam: *What/ you/ do/, Susie?* Susie: *I write/ a letter/ to John.* Sam: *Where is John these days? What/ he/ do?*
Susie: *He is in Japan. He/ study/ there.*
Sam: *I/ watch/a nice film on TV. I came to call you during the commercial break. Would you like to join me?*
Susie: *No, I / prepare/ for tomorrow's test.*



Present Perfect Tense

কোনো কাজ এইমাত্র শেষ হয়েছে কিন্তু তার ফল এখনও বিদ্যমান আছে, এরূপ বোঝাতে Verb এর Present Perfect Tense হয়।
চেনার উপায় :
বাংলা ক্রিয়ার শেষে য়াছ, য়াছি, য়াছে, য়াছেন, য়েছ, য়েছে, য়েছি, য়েছেন ইত্যাদি থাকে।
গঠনপ্রণালি :
Subject+have/has+ ম– ল verb এর past participle + বাকী অংশ।
১. আমি ভাত খাইয়া**ছি/** খেয়েছি। → I have eaten rice.
২. তুমি ভাত খাই**য়াছো/** খেয়েছ। → You have eaten rice.
৩. সে ভাত খাই**য়াছে/** খেয়েছে। → He has eaten rice.
ব্যবহারের ক্ষেত্র :
☑ যে কাজ এই মাত্র করা হয়েছে সেক্ষেত্রে just, just now, already, in the meantime, yet, ever, lately, recently থাকলে Present Perfect Tense হয়।
এখনও আমি কাজটি শেষ করিনি।-I have not finished the work yet.
সে ইতোমধ্যে তার অফিসে চলে গেছে। -He has already gone to his office.
আমি এইমাত্র আমার খাবার খেয়েছি।-I have had my meal just now.
☑ বর্তমান সময় প্রকাশ শব্দ (today, this week, this year) যদি অতীতের কাজে উল্লেখ থাকে ।
এ সপ্তাহে আমি জনকে দেখিনি।- I have not seen John **this week**. [এখানে this week দ্বারা বুঝা যায়, সময় এখনও বর্তমান আছে]
আজ আমি তোমার চিঠি পেয়েছি। - I have received your letter **today**.

Note to remember:
▲ একজনের ক্ষেত্রে has
▲ একাধিকের ক্ষেত্রে have
▲ I এর ক্ষেত্রে have

এবার নিচের বাক্যগুলোতে সঠিক শব্দে (☸) চিহ্ন দাও।
১. আমরা এখানে শিখতে এসেছি = We have/ has come to

holycrossrajshahi.com

learn here.
২. সে বিদেশে গিয়েছে = He have/ has gone abroad.
৩. তিনি আমার নাম তালিকাভুক্ত করেছেন = He have/ has enlisted my name.
৪. তারা আমার নামটি তালিকাভুক্ত করেনি = They have/ has not enlisted my name.
৫. আমি কাজটি শেষ করেছি = I have/ has finished the work.
৬. তারা কাজটি শুর" করেছে = They have/ has started the work.
৭. আমি তাদের নিমন¿ ণ করেছি = I have/ has invited them.
৮. সে তাকে অনেক বই দিয়েছে = He have/ has given him many books.
৯. আমরা এ ব্যাপারে তার সাথে কথা বলেছি -= We have/ has talked with him in this regard.
১০. সে বাড়ি গিয়েছে। = He have/ has gone home.
১১. আমি এ বইটি পড়েছি। = I have/ has read this book.
১২. ছাত্ররা ইংরেজি শিখতে মনোযোগী হয়েছে = The students have/ has become attentive to learn English.
১৩. সে আমার সাথে রাগান্বিত হয়েছে = He have/ has got angry with me.
১৪. তারা দরজাটি বন্ধ পেয়েছে = They have/ has got the door closed.
১৫. আমরা কাজটি সমাপ্ত পেয়েছি = We have/ has got the work finished.

Exercise

A. Look at the pictures and say what has happened.





B. Complete the conversations using the present perfect tense.

Muna : *I see you're still writing. you (not finish) the essay?* Biku : *I (not do) much. I (write) only the introduction.* Muna : *I (finish) mine and I (show) it to the teacher.*
Biku : *the teacher (mark) it? How you (do)?*
Muna: *Yes. I (make) a few mistakes. The teacher (give) me 8 out of 10.*
Biku : *You (do) well!*

Present Perfect Continuous Tense

কোনো কাজ কিছু সময় ধরে হ" ছ বা চলছে এরূপ বোঝাতে Verb এর Present Perfect Continuous Tense হয়।

চেনার উপায়:

বাংলা ক্রিয়ার শেষে তেছ, তেছি, তেছে, তেছেন ইত্যাদি যোগ থাকে এবং হতে/ থেকে/ যাবৎ/ব্যাপিয়া যোগে একটি সময়ের উল্লেখ থাকে।

গঠনপ্রণালি:

Subject+have been/has been+ ম– ল verb এর এর সাথে ing +.....+ since/for + time.

১. আমি দুই ঘণ্টা যাবৎ পড়ি**তেছি** → I have been reading for two hours.
২. তুমি দুই ঘণ্টা যাবৎ পড়ি**তেছ** → You have been reading for two hours.
৩. সে দুই ঘণ্টা যাবৎ পড়ি**তেছে** → He has been reading for two hours.

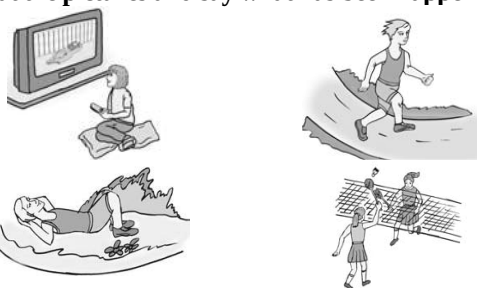
Note to remember:

▲ একজনের ক্ষেত্রে has been
▲ একাধিকের ক্ষেত্রে have been
▲ I এর ক্ষেত্রে have been
▲ কাজটি কখন হতে/ থেকে শুর" হলো বুঝাতে since
▲ কতক্ষণ ধরে/যাবৎ/ব্যাপিয়া কাজটি হ" ছ বুঝাতে for

		have	has	not	been		for	since	
তারা অনেকক্ষণ ধরে কথা বলছে/ বলে আসছে—	They					**talking**			a long time.
আমরা দীর্ঘক্ষণ ধরে অপেক্ষা করছি/ করে আসছি—	We					**waiting**			a long time.
সে গাড়িটি সকাল থেকে চালা" ছ/ চালিয়ে আসছে—	He					**driving** the car			morning.
আমরা ক'ঘণ্টা ধরে ইংরেজি বলছি না /বলে আসছি না—	We					**speaking** English			few hours
ছাত্ররা ক'বছর ধরে দাবি করছে/ করে আসছে—	The students					**claiming**			some years.
তারা অনেকক্ষণ ধরে সেরকম বলে আসছে/ বলছে—	They					**telling** like that			a long time.
আমরা ছয় বছর ধরে ইংরেজি শিখে আসছি/ শিখছি—	We					**learning** English			six years.
সে এক ঘণ্টা ধরে বইটি পড়ছে না—	She					**reading** the book			one hour.
ছাত্ররা সকাল নয়টা থেকে ক্লাসে অপেক্ষা করে আসছে/ করছে—	The students					**waiting** in the class			9 am.
আমি তাকে চার বছর ধরে পড়িয়ে আসছি/ পড়া" ছ—	I					**teaching** him/ her			four years.

Exercise

A Look at the pictures and say what has been happening.



B Rewrite the situation in a single sentence as in the given example.

The rain started three hours ago. It is still raining.
It has been raining for three hours.

1. We started waiting for the bus at 7 am. We are still waiting now.
2. Years ago you started using this computer. You still use it.
3. Bina started work in that company in Baisakh. She still works there.
4. Bhumi rang Madhu twenty minutes ago, and they're still on the phone.
5. You started looking for a job three months ago, and you've still not found one.

Past Tense

অতীত কালে সংঘটিত কোনো কাজকে নির্দেশ করতে Past Tense ব্যবহৃত হয়।

Past Tense চার প্রকার। যথা :

(i) Past Indefinite/ SimpleTense
(ii) Past Continuous/ Progressive Tense
(iii) Past Perfect Tense
(iv) Past Perfect Continuous Tense

Past Simple/ Indefinite

কোনো কাজ অতীতে সংঘটিত হয়েছিল এরূপ বোঝাতে Verb এর Past Indefinite হয়।

চেনার উপায় :

বাংলা ক্রিয়ার শেষে ল, লে, লাম, ত, তে, তাম ইত্যাদি যোগ থাকে।

গঠনপ্রণালি :

Subject+ ম– ল verb এর past form + বাকী অংশ

১. আমি ভাত খেয়ে**ছিলাম/** খেলাম → I ate rice.
২. তুমি ভাত খেয়ে**ছিলে/** খেল → You ate rice.
৩. সে ভাত খেয়ে**ছিল/** খেল → He ate rice.

ব্যবহারের ক্ষেত্র :

☑ অতীতে সম• াদিত কাজটির ক্ষেত্রে finished time-word [yesterday, last year, then, ago, once, in — etc] উল্লেখ থাকলে past simple tense হয়।

১৯৭১ সালে আমরা স্বাধীনতা অর্জন করেছিলাম। -We gained independence in **1971**. [এখানে দেখা যা" ছ 1971 সাল একটি অতীত সময়।]

গতকাল তোমার চিঠি পেয়েছিলাম। -I received your letter **yesterday**.

Note to remember:

(i) Negative করতে হলে বাক্যে auxiliary verb (was/ were) থাকলে তার সাথে not যোগ করতে হবে। আর auxiliary না থাকলে didn't লিখতে হবে এবং ম– ল verb এর base (ম– ল) form হবে।
(ii) Interrogative করতে হলে বাক্যে auxiliary verb (was/ were) প্রথমে আসবে। আর auxiliary না থাকলে did প্রথমে বসবে এবং ম– ল verb টি base (ম– ল) form এ হবে।

১. গতকাল আমি একটি ছবি দেখেছিলাম।- I **saw** a movie yesterday.
২. গতকাল আমি নাটক দেখিনি।– I **didn't see** a play yesterday.
৩. গত বছর আমি জাপান ভ্রমণ করেছিলাম।-Last year, I **travelled** to Japan.
৪. গত বছর আমি কোরিয়া ভ্রমণ করিনি।– Last year, I **didn't travel** to Korea.
৫. গত রাতে কি তুমি নৈশভোজ করেছিলে?-**Did** you **have** dinner last night?
৬. সে তার গাড়ি ধুয়েছিল।- She **washed** her car.
৭. সে তার গাড়ি ধোয়নি।- He **didn't wash** his car.
৮. সে শিশু হিসেবে লাজুক ছিল কিন্তু এখন সে প্রাণবন্ত@ ।-She **was** shy as a child, but now she is lively.
৯. সে আগে টমেটো পছন্দ করতো না।- He **didn't like** tomatoes before.
১০. আমরা বন্ধুভাবাপন্ন ছিলাম।- We were friendly.
১১. তারা পরিশ্রমী ছিলেন না।-They were not industrious.
১২. এখানে আমার বড় কারবার ছিল।-I had a big business here.
১৩. তারা সোমবার সিলেটে ছিল।- They were at Sylhet on Monday.
১৪. সে প্রায়ই কক্সবাজার যেত।- He would often go to Cox's Bazar.

Exercise

A Read what Binita says about her daily routine.

I usually get up at 6am. I have a bath, and go to the temple for prayers. I come back from the temple, and have breakfast. Then, I get ready for school. I walk to school, which takes me about 20 minutes. School starts at 10. We have lunch break at 1 : 00 pm. I never have lunch at school. School is over at 4, and I return home at 5:30. I'm always tired when I get home. I usually revise my lessons in the evening. I don't usually go out. I have my dinner at nine. I go to bed at 10:30. I always sleep well.

Now, write what happened yesterday.

Jenny got up at 6 am yesterday. he……

Past Continuous/ Progressive Tense

কোনো কাজ অতীতে হ" ছল বা চলছিল এরূপ বোঝাতে Verb এর Past Continuous হয়।

চেনার উপায় :

বাংলা ক্রিয়ার শেষে তেছিল/তেছিলাম/তেছিলেন থাকে।

গঠনপ্রণালি :

Subject+ was/ were + ম– ল verb এর ing +.....

১. আমি ভাত খাইতে**ছিলাম/**খা" ছলাম → I was eating rice.

২. তুমি ভাত খাইতে**ছিলে/** খা" ছলে → You were eating rice.
৩. সে ভাত খাইতে**ছিল/** খা" ছল → He was eating rice.

ব্যবহারের ক্ষেত্র :

☑ দুটো অতীতের কাজ 'যখন' প্রকাশক Conjunction (When বা while) দিয়ে যোগ করা থাকলে যে কাজটি সাধারণত কিছু সময় ধরে সম• াদিত হ" ছল সেটির Past Continuous Tense এবং যে কাজটি instantly ঘটে তা Past Indifinite Tense হয়।

গতকাল যখন সে এসেছিল আমি তখন টেলিভিশন দেখছিলাম। - When he came to me last night, I was watching T.V. (এখানে 'দেখা' কাজটি সময় নিয়ে ঘটে।)

যখন তারা পড়ছিল আমি তখন লাইট বন্ধ করে দিলাম। - When they were reading , I switched the light off.

☑ এমনও হতে পারে দুটো কাজ-ই কিছু সময় ধরে চলছে, এক্ষেত্রে When ব্যবহার না করে While ব্যবহার শ্রেয় এবং দুটি verb-ই Past Continuous Tense হবে।

Example :

যখন রেজা পত্রিকা পড়ছিল তখন আমি গান গা" ছলাম। - While Reza was reading newspaper, I was singing a song.

মার্ক যখন বই পড়ছিল মার্থা তখন টিভি দেখছিল। -While Mark was reading a book, Martha was watching TV./ Martha was watching TV while Mark was reading a book.

☑ অতীত কালে কোনো চলমান বা পরিবর্তনশীল অবস্থার বর্ণনা করতে। যেমন :

আবহাওয়া ভালো হ" ছল।

The weather was getting better.

পাখিরা কিচিরমিচির করছিল।

-The birds were chirping.

মৃদু বাতাস বইছিল।- A gentle breeze was blowing.

Past Perfect Tense

অতীতে সংঘটিত দুটি কাজের মধ্যে যে কাজটি প– র্বে সংঘটিত হয়েছিল, সে কাজটি বুঝাতে Verb এর যে রূপ হয়, তাকে Past Perfect Tense বলে।

চেনার উপায় :

বাংলা ক্রিয়ার শেষে য়েছিলাম/য়েছিল/য়েছিলেন থাকে।

গঠনপণালি :

Subject + had + verb এর past participle + বাকী অংশ

১. আমি ভাত খাইয়া**ছিলাম/** খেয়েছিলাম → I had eaten rice.
২. তুমি ভাত খাইয়া**ছিলা/** খেয়েছিলা → You had eaten rice.
৩. সে ভাত খাইয়া**ছিল/** খেয়েছিল → He had eaten rice.

ব্যবহারের ক্ষেত্র :

☑ অতীতে সম• ন্ন হওয়া দুটো কাজকে প– র্বে (before) বা পরে (after) প্রকাশক Conjunction দিয়ে যুক্ত করলে যে কাজ প্রথম সম• ন্ন হয়েছে সেটি Past Perfect Tense ; এবং অন্য কাজটি Past Simple Tense হয়।

Note to remember:

▲after অর্থ পরে অর্থাৎ after এর পরে প্রথম সম• ন্ন কাজটি বসবে ▲অপর অংশ প্রথমে বসবে	▲ before অর্থ প– র্বে অর্থাৎ before এর প– র্বে প্রথম সম• ন্ন কাজটি বসবে ▲ অপর অংশ পরে বসবে

এখন নিচের শ– ন্যস্থানগুলো প– রণ করো। প্রথমটি করে দেয়া হল।

১. খেলা দেখার পর তারা বাড়ি ফিরল
= They *returned* home after they *had watched* the game.
২. স্কুল আরম্ভ হবার প– র্বে ছেলেরা ক্রিকেট খেলেছিল
= The boys — cricket before the school —.
৩. আমরা স্কুলে পৌঁছার পর বৃষ্টি আরম্ভ হল
= The rain — after we— reached school.
৪. আমরা স্কুলে পৌঁছার প– র্বে বৃষ্টি আরম্ভ হল
= The rain — before we — reached school.
৫. আমি বাড়ি পৌঁছার প– র্বে বাবা মারা গেলেন
= My father — before I — home.
৬. বৃষ্টি থামার পর খেলা শুর" হল
= The play — after the rain —.
৭. আমি বাড়ি পৌঁছার পর বাবা মারা গেলেন
= My father — after I — home.
৮. আমি স্কুলে পৌঁছার প– র্বে ঘণ্টা বাজল
= The bell — before I — reached school.
৯. গাড়ি পৌঁছার প– র্বে আমরা স্টেশনে পৌঁছলাম
= We — the station before the bus —.
১০. পুলিশ আসার প– র্বে চোরটি পালাল
= The thief — away before the police —.

Past Perfect Continuous Tense

অতীতে কিছু সময় ধরে কোনো কাজ হ" ছল বা চলছিল এরূপ বোঝাতে Verb এর Past Perfect Continuous হয়।

চেনার উপায় :

যাবৎ/ ব্যপিয়া/ ধরে/ হতে/ থেকে এবং ক্রিয়ার শেষে তেছিল/ তেছিলাম/ তেছিলেন থাকবে।

গঠনপণালি :

Subject + had been + ম– ল verb এর ing +.....

১. আমি দুই ঘণ্টা **যাবৎ** পড়ি**তেছিলাম/** পড়ছিলাম → I had been reading for two hours.
২. তুমি দুই ঘণ্টা **যাবৎ** পড়ি**তেছিলে/**পড়ছিলে → You had been reading for two hours.
৩. সে দুই ঘণ্টা **যাবৎ** পড়ি**তেছিল/**পড়ছিল → He had been reading for two hours.

ব্যবহারের ক্ষেত্র :

☑ অতীতে একটি কাজের প– র্বে আরেকটি কাজ কিছুক্ষণ ধরে চলছিল বুঝাতে এই Tense ব্যবহৃত হয়। এসব ক্ষেত্রে সাধারণত time expression (since + time/ for + time/ how long) এবং before-যুক্ত একটি অংশ উল্লেখ থাকে।

(i) মারা যাবার প– র্বে আবু ঢাকায় দশ বছর ধরে বাস করছিল।
Abu had been living in Dhaka **for ten years** *before he died.*

(ii) টনি পৌঁছার প– র্বে তারা প্রায় এক ঘণ্টা ধরে কথা বলছিল।
They **had been talking** for about an hour before Tony arrived.

(iii) তুমি যোগদান করার প– র্বে সে ঐ কোম• ানীতে তিন বছর ধরে কাজ করছিল।
She **had been working** at that company for three years before you came.

Future Tense

ভবিষ্যতে বা পরবর্তীতে কোনো কাজ সংঘটিত হবে এরূপ বুঝাতে Verb এর Future Tense হয়।

Future Tense চার প্রকার। যথা:

(i) Future Indefinite/ Simple Tense
(ii) Future Continuous/ Progressive Tense
(iii) Future Perfect Tense
(iv) Future Perfect Continuous Tense

Future Indefinite/ Simple Tense

কোনো কাজ ভবিষ্যতে সংঘটিত হবে এরূপ বোঝাতে Future Indefinite Tense হয়।

চেনার উপায় :

বাংলা ক্রিয়ার শেষে বে, ব, বা, বেন, এদের যে কোনো একটি যোগ থাকে।

গঠনপ্রণালি :

Subject+ shall/will+ verb এর ম– ল form + বাকী অংশ

১. আমি ভাত খা**ব** → I shall eat rice.
২. তুমি ভাত খা**বে** → You will eat rice.
৩. সে ভাত খা**বে** → He will eat rice.

ব্যবহারের ক্ষেত্র :

☑ ভবিষ্যতে যে কাজ সম• াদন হবে সেই কাজ Future Simple Tense হবে। এক্ষেত্রে সাধারণত next, tomorrow, in future-এ ধরনের শব্দ থাকতে পারে।
I will come tomorrow.

☑ ভবিষ্যতে সম• র্কিত মতামত, ধারণা, অনুমান প্রকাশ করতে। এক্ষেত্রে সাধারণত hope, expect, possibly, probably উল্লেখ থাকতে পারে।
I hope he will come round soon.

Note to remember :

▲ I, we, এর পরে shall বসে
▲ অন্য সব person এর পরে will বসে
▲ তবে promise প্রকাশ করার জন্য will বসে
এবার, shall হবে না will হবে তা (▯) চিহ্ন দ্বারা দেখাও। প্রথমটি ক'রে দেয়া হল।

▯

১. আমি স্কুলে যাব। = I shall/ will go to school.
২. সে স্কুলে যাবে। = He/She shall/ will go to school.
৩. তুমি স্কুলে যাবে। = You shall/ will go to school.
৪. তোমরা স্কুলে যাবে। = You shall/ will go to school.
৫. তারা স্কুলে যাবে। = They shall/ will go to school.
৬. আমরা স্কুলে যাব। = We shall/ will go to school.
৭. বিনু স্কুলে যাবে। = Binu shall/ will go to school.
৮. রিনা ও বিনা স্কুলে যাবে। = Rina and Bina shall/ will go to school.
৯. আমি কাউকে তোমার গোপন বলব না। = I shall/ will not tell anyone your secret.

Note : আধুনিক Grammar এ সকল Person এর সাথে will ব্যবহার করা হয়।

Future Continuous Tense

চেনার উপায় :

বাংলা ক্রিয়ার শেষে তে থাকব/ তে থাকবে/ তে থাকবা থাকে।

গঠনপ্রণালি :

Subject + shall/ will be + verb-এর ing + বাকী অংশ

১. আমি বইটি পড়িতে থা**কিব** → I shall be reading the book.
২. তুমি বইটি পড়িতে থা**কিবে** → You will be reading the book.
৩. সে বইটি পড়িতে থা**কিবে** → He will be reading the book.

ব্যবহারের ক্ষেত্র :

ভবিষ্যৎ কালে কোনো কাজ চলতে থাকবে বুঝাতে Future Continuous Tense হয়।

Future Perfect Tense

চেনার উপায় :

বাংলা ক্রিয়ার শেষে য়ে থাকব/ য়ে থাকবে / য়ে থাকবা থাকে।

গঠনপ্রণালি :

Subject + shall/ will + have + verb-এর past participle + বাকি অংশ

১. আমি বিকাল চারটার মধ্যে বইটি পড়িয়া থাক**ব** → I shall have finished reading the book by 4 pm.
২. তুমি বিকাল চারটার মধ্যে বইটি পড়িয়া থাক**বা** → You will have finished reading the book by 4 pm.
৩. সে বিকাল চারটার মধ্যে বইটি পড়িয়া থাক**বে** → He will have finished reading the book by 4 pm.

ব্যবহারের ক্ষেত্র :

ভবিষ্যৎ কালে কোনো কাজ উল্লেখিত সময়ের আগে সমাপ্ত হবে বা কিছু সময় ধরে চলতে থাকবে বুঝাতে Future Perfect Tense ব্যবহার করা হয়।

Future Perfect Continuous Tense

চেনার উপায় :

বাংলা ক্রিয়ার শেষে যাবৎ/ ব্যাপিয়া .. .. য়ে থাকব/ য়ে থাকবে/ য়ে থাকবা থাকে।

গঠনপ্রণালি :

Subject + shall/ will + have + been + verb-এর ing +.....

১. আমি ২০২০ সাল থেকে এখানে বাস করতে থা**কব** → I shall have been living here since 2020.
২. সে ২০২০ সাল থেকে এখানে বাস করতে থাক**বে** → She will have been living here since 2020.
৩. তারা ২০২০ সাল থেকে এখানে বাস করতে থাক**বে** → They will have been living here since 2020.

ব্যবহারের ক্ষেত্র :

ভবিষ্যতে কোনো কাজ শুর" হয়ে একটি নির্দিষ্ট সময় ধরে চলবে বুঝাতে Future Perfect Continuous Tense ব্যবহার করা হয়।

Practice

A.

01. Indicate the tense of the verbs in the following sentences.
(a) The sun gives us light.
(b) A student learns his lessons regularly.
(c) Children will play tomorrow.
(d) They could not play yesterday.
(e) Birds fly in the sky.
(f) The school will reopen on next Sunday.
(g) We shall help the poor.
(h) We'll be promoted on December 31.
(i) The police arrested the criminals.
(j) The sun rises in the east.

02. Write the correct form of verbs. (Verb এর সঠিক রূপ লেখ।)

▲ always, every, often, normally, usually, sometimes, seldom, never, first, then থাকলে Present Simple কর:
▲ at the moment, at this moment, today, now, right now, Listen!, Look! থাকলে Present Continuous কর:

holycrossrajshahi.com

(a) Look! He (leave) the house.
(b) Quiet please! I (write) a test.
(c) She usually (walk) to school.
(d) But look! Today she (go) by bike.
(e) Every Sunday we (go) to see my grandparents.
(f) He often (go) to the cinema.
(g) We (play) monopoly at the moment.
(h) The child seldom (cry).
(i) I (not / do) anything at the moment.

03. Put the verbs into the correct tense. (সঠিক tense অনুযায়ী verb বসাও।

- yesterday, ... ago, in 1990, the other day, last ... থাকলে Past Simple কর:
- just, already, up to now, until now / till now, ever, (not) yet, so far, lately / recently থাকলে Present Perfect কর :

(a) I (just / finish) my homework.
(b) Mary (already / write) five letters.
(c) Tom (move) to this town in 1994.
(d) My friend (be) in Canada two years ago.
(e) I never (be) to Canada.
(f) But I (already / travel) to London a couple of times.
(g) Last week, Mary and Paul (go) to the cinema.
(h) I can't take any pictures because I (not / buy) a new film yet.
(i) They (spend) their holiday in New Zealand last summer.

B.01.Read the following passage and rewrite it in present tense.
Salma listened to her brother who was talking with someone on the phone. "Hello, could I speak to someone called Janet Green?" Rafiq asked nervously. Then he gave their address. When he finished, Salma felt very excited. "Was she there?" she asked. "Yes,"replied Rafiq.

02. Read the following passage and rewrite it in present tense.
We had a cow. It was called Dhabali. It was white in colour. Dhabali gave us milk. My mother milked her.

03. Read the following passage and rewrite it in future tense.
The farmer wakes up early in the morning and goes out in quest of work. He toils hard from dawn to dusk for his employer and gets his wages at night. Then he goes to market, purchases his daily necessaries and returns to his hut.

04. Read the following passage and rewrite it in past tense.
I have decided to get myself admitted into Rangpur Zilla School. It offers an extensive range of co-curricular activities. It is a famous school. The teachers of this school are friendly. I feel proud of this school.

05. Read the following passage and rewrite it in past tense.
Hans lives happily and works hard in Frankel's house. He admires Frankel and his magic powers, but he is puzzled. Frankel's house is always clean, but who cleans it? Hans cleans the laboratory and his own room, but who cleans the other ones? And who cooks the meals? It is very puzzling. Can Frankel use his magic to do all these things?

06. Read the following passage and rewrite it in present tense.
The sports meet started at 9 am with the running of the Olympic torch by a student of class X. This was followed by the hoisting of the national flag and the flying of the pigeons. The actual sports opened when the headmaster of the school declared the sports meet open. The DC was the chief guest. The function came to an and with a vote of thanks to the chief guest.

07. Read the following passage and rewrite it in past tense.
Hazrat Omar is the Second Caliph of Islam. He is a good soldier and kind ruler. He is used to going out in disguise to know the condition of his subjects. One night he goes out in disguise. He hears a sound of crying.

08. Read the following passage and rewrite it in present tense.
I got up early in the morning. I washed my hands and face. I had my breakfast. Thereafter I went to college. I sat on the first bench. I heard the lecture well. I took notes of every point.

09. Read the following passage and rewrite it in past tense.
A tall man is walking along a country road. He comes to a bend. He stops there suddenly. A big snake is lying across the road. The man gets scared. He is trembling. The stick drops from his hand. It runs away.

10. Read the following passage and rewrite it in present tense.
Arsenic had taken the village Lalpur in its grip. Most of the tubewells were affected by this poison. Still no attempt on the part of the local govt. was made to identify the affected tube-wells. People out of ignorance were drinking water from those tube-wells. Nearly one hundred people were suffering from incurable sore in the palms of hands and feet.

11. Read the following passage and rewrite it in present tense.
Lutfur was a poor boy who lives in a slum. He could not sleep in peace. He had to get up early in the morning and start his day in search of poly thene bags, scrap paper that could be sold. He had to think himself what he would eat.

12. Read the following passage and rewrite it in present tense.
I saw the boys playing cricket. They were enjoying the match. Suddenly one of them came to me and asked me whether I liked to play with them. I agreed instantly and started playing with them.

13. Read the following passage and rewrite it in present tense.
Salam was a very good boy. He wanted to do well in his examination. He was trying his best to secure the first position in the next exam. He had completed all syllabuses. Now he was busy in

revision.

14. Read the following passage and rewrite it in present tense.

It took a long time and hard labour to invent computer. Now a days we could not think of a day without computer. Computer was being used in every aspect of life. It had a tremendous power to ease human efforts. It rendered great service to mankind.

15. Read the following passage and rewrite it in past tense.

Karim's mother puts her food in the cage. But she likes to have it with Karim. She talks to her a lot. Mimi is learning to talk. She calls Karim by name.

Answer

A.

01. (a) present simple (b) present simple (c) future simple (d) past simple (e) present simple (f) future simple (g) future simple (h) future simple (i) past simple (j) present simple

02. (a) is leaving (b) am writing (c) walks (d) is going (e) go (f) goes (g) are playing (h) cries (i) am not doing

03. (a) have just finished (b) has already written (c) moved (d) has been (e) have never been (f) have already travelled (g) went (h) have not bought (i) spent.

B.

01. Salma listens to her brother who is talking with someone on the phone. "Hello, can I speak to someone called Janet Green?" Rafiq asks nervously. Then he gives their address. When he finishes, Salma feels very excited. "Is she there?" she asks. "Yes," replies Rafiq.

02. We have a cow. It is called Dhabali. It is white in colour. Dhabali gives us milk. My mother milks her.

03. The farmer will wake up early in the morning and will go out in quest of work. He will toil hard from dawn to dusk for his employer and will get his wages at night. Then he will go to market, will purchase his daily necessaries and will return to his hut.

04. I had decided to get myself admitted into Rangpur Zilla School. It offered an extensive range of co-curricular activities. It was a famous school. The teachers of this school were friendly. I felt proud of this school.

05. Hans lived happily and worked hard in Frankel's house. He admired Frankel and his magic powers, but he was puzzled. Frankel's house was always clean, but who cleaned it? Hans cleaned the laboratory and his own room, but who cleaned the other ones? And who cooked the meals? It was very puzzling. Could Frankel use his magic to do all these things?

06. The sports meet starts at 9 am with the running of the Olympic torch by a student of class X. This is followed by the hoisting of the national flag and the flying of pigeons. The actual sports opens when the headmaster of the school declares the sports meet open. The DC is the chief guest. The function comes to an end with a vote of thanks to the chief guest.

07. Hazrat Omar (R.) was the second Caliph of Islam. He was a good soldier and kind ruler. He used to go out in disguise to know the condition of his subjects. One night he went out in disguise. He heard a sound of crying.

08. I get up early in the morning. I wash my hands and face. I have my breakfast. Thereafter I go to college. I sit on the first bench. I hear the lecture well. I take notes of every point.

09. A tall man was walking along a country road. He came to a bend. He stopped there suddenly. A big snake was lying across the road. The man got scared. He was trembling. The stick dropped from his hand. It ran away.

10. Arsenic has taken the village Lalpur in its grip. Most of the tubewells are affected by this poison. Still no attempt on the part of the local govt. is made to identify the affected tubewells. People out of ignorance are drinking water from those tubewells. Nearly one hundred people are suffering from incurable sore in the palms of hands and feet.

11. Lutfur is a poor boy who lives in a slum. He can not sleep in peace. He has to get up early in the morning and start his day in search of polythene bags, scrap paper that can be sold. He has to think himself what he will eat.

12. I see the boys playing cricket. They are enjoying the match. Suddenly one of them comes to me and asks me whether I like to play with them. I agree instantly and start playing with them.

13. Salam is a very good boy. He wants to do well in his examination. He is trying his best to secure the first position in the next exam. He has completed all syllabuses. Now he is busy in revision.

14. It takes a long time and hard labour to invent computer. Nowadays we can not think of a day without computer. Computer is being used in every aspect of life. It has a tremendous power to ease human efforts. It renders great service to mankind.

15. Karim's mother put her food in the cage. But she liked to have it with Karim. She talked to her a lot. Mimi was learning to talk. She called Karim by name.

holycrossrajshahi.com

ইংরেজিতে কোনো বাক্য লিখতে হলে অবশ্যই verb ব্যবহার করতে হয় এবং এই verb কে subject-এর number ও person অনুযায়ী ব্যবহার করতে হয়। subject ও verb এর এই সমন্বয়কে subject-verb agreement বলে। নিম্নে এর গুর" ত্বপ– র্ণ নিয়মাবলি আলোচনা করা হল।

Rule–1 :

Subject যদি Singular হয় তাহলে Sentence- র verbও Singular হবে। উলে-খ্য am, is, was, has singular subject-এর সাথে Tense ভেদে ব্যবহৃত হয়। তবে you এর সঙ্গে Present Tense- এ are এবং Past Tense- এ were ব্যবহৃত হয়। I এর ক্ষেত্রে Present Perfect Tense-এ have ব্যবহৃত হয়। Had Past Perfect- এ tense- এ সকল number- এর Subject-এর সঙ্গেই ব্যবহার করা হয়।

Rule–2 :

Subject যদি plural হয় তবে Sentence-এর verbও plural হবে। উলে-খ্য are, were, have, plural subject-এর সাথে Tense ভেদে ব্যবহৃত হয়।

Note : Subject যদি 3rd person singular number হয় তাহলে present indefinite tense- এ ম– ল verb- র সঙ্গে s বা es যোগ হবে। এছাড়া Subject- এর number ভেদে ম– ল verb কখনো পরিবর্তন হয় না। ম– ল verb সব সময় tense অনুযায়ী পরিবর্তিত হয়।

Rule–3 :

অভিন্ন number ও person যখন and দিয়ে যুক্ত হয় তখন verb টি Plural হবে এবং ভদ্ররীতি অনুযায়ী 2nd Person + 3rd person + 1st person (231) ক্রম অনুসারে বসবে।

You, he and I are friends.

***কিন্তু দোষ স্বীকারের ক্ষেত্রে ভদ্ররীতি অনুযায়ী 1st person + 3rd person + 2nd person (132) ক্রম অনুসারে বসবে।

I, he and you are responsible.

ব্যতিক্রম: and

Rule–4 :

একাধিক পদ (post) বা adjective and দিয়ে যুক্ত হলে এবং একটি article থাকলে singular হবে; আর একাধিক article থাকলে plural হবে। কারণ একটি article থাকলে একক ব্যক্তি বা বস্তু বা ধারণা নির্দেশ করে এবং একাধিক article থাকলে একাধিক ব্যক্তি বা বস্তু বা ধারণা নির্দেশ করে।

The Principal and Secretary of the college [come]. **Ans :** is coming

The Principal and the Secretary of the college [come]. **Ans :** are coming

A black and a white cat (be) under the table. **Ans :** are

A black and white cat (be) under the table. **Ans :** is

Rule–5 :

and দিয়ে দুটি সমজাতীয় singular noun যুক্ত হলেও যদি একক ব্যক্তি বা বস্তু বা ধারণা নির্দেশ করে তবে verbটি singular হবে। একাধিক বুঝালে verb টি Plural হবে।

Bread and butter [be] my favourite food. **Ans.** is

Slow and steady [win] the race. **Ans.** wins

Rahim and Karim [be] two brothers. **Ans.** are

Rule–6 :

either ..... or , neither ..... nor, not only .....but also, or, not..... but দিয়ে দুটি noun যুক্ত হলে ২য় noun অনুসারে verb বসবে।

Neither John nor his **friends** [be] going to the beach today. **Ans:** are

Rule–7 :

দুটি noun/pronoun অন্য সব connectors [as well as, with, including, together with, along with, in addition to, accompanied by কিংবা কোনো preposition] দিয়ে যুক্ত থাকলে প্রথম noun/ pronoun টি অনুসারে *verb* টি বসবে।

The view of these disciplines [vary] from time to time. **Ans:** varies

The effects of this crime [be] likely to be devastating. **Ans:** are

He as well as his friends [come] to visit us. **Ans :** comes

He together with his pupils [prove] as a talent. **Ans :** proves

Rule–8 :

Introductory there/here/adverb দিয়ে কোনো বাক্য শুর" হলে *verb* এর পর অবস্থিত noun/ pronoun (Subject) টি অনুসারে verb বসবে।

There [be] no **birds** in the sky. **Ans :** are

There [be] no **bird** in the sky. **Ans :** is

Rule–9 :

any +singular noun, every + singular noun, each + singular noun, none, either, neither, many a থাকলে subject-টিকে singular ধরতে হয়।

None [work] harder. **Ans.** works

Rule–10 :

none of/ no/some এর পর singular noun থাকলে একে singular ধরতে হবে, Plural noun থাকলে Plural ধরতে হবে।

No **examples** [be] relevant to this. **Ans :** are

No **example** [be] relevant to this. **Ans :** is

Rule–11 :

Proper Name, শিরোনাম (title) দেখতে plural হলেও তাকে singular ধরতে হবে।

'The Arabian Nights' [be] an interesting book. **Ans : is**

Gulliver's Travels [be] an ironic novel. **Ans : is**

Rule–12 :

Collective noun যখন unit বুঝাবে তখন তাকে singular ধরতে হবে কিন্তু পৃথক সত্তা বুঝালে Plural ধরতে হবে। (Army, band, club, committee, team, family, crew etc)

The jury[be] considering its verdict. **Ans :** is

The jury [be] considering their verdicts . **Ans:** are

Rule–13 :

সময়, টাকা এবং পরিমাপ প্রকাশক unit-কে singular ধরতে হবে।

Twenty five dollars [be] too much to pay for the shirt. **Ans :** is

Twenty miles [be] too much to run in one day. **Ans:** is

Rule–14 :

Gerund, infinitive, that clause ইত্যাদি subject হলে তাকে singular ধরতে হবে ।

To err [be] human. **Ans :** is

Swimming [be] a good exercise. **Ans :** is

That he will come [be] known to me. **Ans :** is

Rule–15 :

The + adjective যদি noun হিসাবে ব্যবহৃত হয় তবে

holycrossrajshahi.com

subject-টিকে plural ধরতে হবে।
The rich [be] not always happy. **Ans :** are
The pious [be] happy. **Ans :** are

Practice



01. Choose the appropriate verb for the following gaps.

(a) Not only I but also my brothers am/is/are good at English.
(b) Is/are my boss or my sisters responsible?
(c) Some of the votes seem/seems to have been miscounted.
(d) There was/ were an accident last week.
(e) There have/ has been complaints against you.
(f) The receptionist and cashier has/have gone out.
(g) The director and the manager differ/ differs in opinion.
(h) A swarm of bees is/ are flying overhead.
(i) Everyone is/ are going on a picnic.
(j) It is I who am/ is/ are to blame.

02. Choose the appropriate verbs :

(a) Some people is/are/am very good at math.
(b) Somebody have/has won the lottery ticket.
(c) The doctor who has visited dozens of countries and has helped thousands of patients all around the world is/are/am over there.
(d) There is/ are/am two sides to every argument.
(e) 5,280 feet is/are/am equal to a mile.
(f) Jill as well as Jack is/are/am up the hill.
(g) Either Helen or I go/goes.
(h) There was/were a lot of people here.
(i) Everybody was/were here for you. All of them was/were waiting to listen to you.
(j) Ten new flats is/are/am very expensive.
(k) Rice is/are/am a common food all over the world. It is/are/am very cheap. Two bags of rice cost/costs only Tk 3000.
(l) Either the bus driver or the motorcycle rider is/are/am responsible for the accident.
(m) Neither the 23 children in the class nor Tony seem/seems to be upset about failing the spelling bee.
(n) A large number of countries is/are/am members of the United Nations.
(o) Not only the fans but also the team's head coach was/were shocked.
(p) The number of computer advances is/are/ am increasing.

Answer

01. (a) are (b) Is (c) seem (d) was (e) have (f) has (g) differ (h) is (i) is (j) am
02. (a) are (b) has (c) is (d) are (e) is (f) is (g) go (h) were (i) was, were (j) are (k) is, is, cost (l) is (m) seems (n) are (o) was (p) is



Right Forms of Verbs 10

বাক্যে Tense ও Subject এর সাথে verb এর সংগতিপ– র্ণ ব্যবহারই Right Form of verbs. নিম্নে কিছু গুর" ত্বপ– র্ণ Right form of verb এর নিয়ম দেওয়া হল :

Rule–1 :

যে কাজ সব সময় বা মাঝে মাঝে বা প্রায়ই ঘটে সেক্ষেত্রে present simple tense হয়। এক্ষেত্রে সাধারণত always, regularly, daily, sometimes, often, everyday, occasionally, generally, usually, normally, frequently, now and then ইত্যাদি উল্লেখ থাকতে পারে। নিম্নের উদাহরণগুলো লক্ষ কর :

What do frogs (eat)? **Ans :** What do frogs eat? (এখানে frog-এর খাদ্যাভ্যাসকে বুঝানো হয়েছে)
I (go) to my English teacher every Sunday. **Ans :** go (এখানে যাওয়া কাজটি repeatedly হয় বুঝানো হয়েছে)
My father (work) in Chittagong. **Ans :** works
I (play) football on every Monday. **Ans :** play
I (not be) glad to receive your letter. **Ans :** am not

****Do/Does/Did-এর পর verb-এর মল form (base form/ bare infinitive) ব্রবি ত হয়।**

I (not go) to my English teacher every Sunday. **Ans:** do not go
I (go) to my English teacher every Sunday? **Ans:** Do I go
I (not go) to my English teacher every Sunday? **Ans:** don't I go
I usually (not get) up early in the morning. **Ans:** do not get

মনে রাখতে হবে Subject টি 3rd Person Singular Number হলে verb টির সাথে s বা es যোগ হবে।

Alice (work) at an insurance company. **Ans:** works (এখানে Alice-এর permanent situation বুঝানো হয়েছে)
He (go) to his English teacher every Sunday. **Ans:** goes
He (not go) to his English teacher every Sunday? **Ans: doesn't** he **go**
It (rain) in the rainy season. **Ans:** rains (এখানে rainy season-এর বৈশিষ্ট্য বুঝানো হয়েছে)
Water (boil) at 100^0C. **Ans:** boils

Rule–2 :

Time-tabled future event বুঝাতে Present Simple ব্যবহার করা হয়।

His train (arrive) at **11:46. Ans:** arrives
I (start) my new job **tomorrow**. **Ans:** start

Rule–3 :

কাজটি এই মুহ– র্তে ঘটছে এমন বুঝাতে Present Continuous Tense ব্যবহৃত হয়। এক্ষেত্রে সাধারণত now, at this moment, at present, look!, listen! hush! ইত্যাদি উল্লেখ থাকে।

I (write) to you about it now. **Ans:** am writing
It [get] dark now. **Ans:** is getting
At present she [work] abroad. **Ans:** is working

Rule–4 :

যে কাজ করা হয়েছে সেক্ষেত্রে just, just now, already, in the meantime, yet, never, ever, lately, recently, present time-word (today, this week/ year) থাকলে সাধারণত Present perfect হয়।

I (not finish) the work yet. **Ans:** have not finished
He (not go) to his office yet? **Ans:** Hasn't he gone
I (have) my meal just now. **Ans:** have had
I (not see) John **this week**. **Ans:** have not seen [এখানে this week দ্বারা বুঝা যায়, সময় এখনও বর্তমান আছে]
I (receive) your letter **today**. **Ans:** have received
I (receive) — your letter just now. **Ans:** have received

Rule–5 :

যে কাজ করা হয়েছে, কিন্তু সময় উল্লেখ নাই; সেক্ষেত্রে যদি কাজটির ফলাফল বর্তমান থাকে তবে Present Perfect হবে।

I (break) my leg, and so I cannot go on holiday. **Ans:** have broken [এখানে break-এর ফলাফল হল: My leg is broken now.]
I (travel) in Africa a lot. **Ans:** have travelled [এখানে travel-এর ফলাফল হল: I know Africa.]

Rule–6 :

অতীতে যে কাজ শুরু হয়েছে এবং এখনও ঘটছে সেক্ষেত্রে Present Perfect Continuous Tense হবে। এসব ক্ষেত্রে সাধারণত time expression (since + time/ for + time/ how long) উল্লেখ থাকে।

I (live) in the same house for 10 years. **Ans:** have been living
I (live) in the same house since 2000 **Ans:** have been living
I (live) in the same house since I was four. **Ans:** have been living
How long you (study) English? **Ans:** How long have you been studying English?

Rule–7 :

Non-progressive verb গুলোর ক্ষেত্রে Present Perfect Continuous Tense এর পরিবর্তে Present Perfect Tense ব্যবহার করা হয়। লক্ষ কর :

John (be) ill all week. has been (~~has been being~~)
She (have) a cold since Monday. has had (~~has been having~~)
I only (know) her for two days. have known (~~have been knowing~~)
Jerry (be) at the orphanage since he was four. had been (~~had been being~~)

Rule–8 :

অতীতে সম• াদিত কাজটির ক্ষেত্রে finished time-word [yesterday, last year, then, ago, the other day, once, in — etc] উল্লেখ থাকলে সেক্ষেত্রে Past Indefinite হবে।

We (gain) independence in **1971**. **Ans:** gained [এখানে দেখা যা" ছ সময় শেষ হয়ে গেছে]
I (receive) your letter **yesterday**. **Ans:** received
We (invite) — our friends and relatives a few days ago. **Ans:** invited
The great ship, Titanic (sail) — for New York on April 10, 1912. **Ans:** sailed
At that time she (be) — the largest ship **Ans:** was

Rule–9 :

ঐতিহাসিক ঘটনা, বা কোন কবিতার আলোচনা Present Simple বা Past Simple হয়।

Robert Frost (not like) separation from nature. **Ans**. did not like/ does not like তবে অতীতের সাধারণ ঘটনার বর্ণনা Past Simple হবে।
Then we (buy) — some tickets and entered the zoo. **Ans :** bought
The Titanic (regard) — as unsinkable. **Ans :** was regarded
But computer (invent) — overnight. **Ans :** was not invented
It (take) — a long time to invent computer. **Ans :** took

Rule–10 :

যে কাজ করা হয়েছে, কিন্তু সময় উল্লেখ নাই; সেক্ষেত্রে যদি কাজটির ফলাফল বর্তমান না থাকে তবে Past Indefinite হবে

I (wash) my room, but my kid has already made it dirty. **Ans:** washed [wash-এর ফলাফল হল র" মটি পরিষ্কার থাকবে কিন্তু The room is now dirty, not clean.
Shakespeare (learn) Italian. **Ans:** learnt [result not related to present, as he is dead]
কিন্তু My sister (learn) French. **Ans:** has learnt [result related to present; that is she can speak French now]

Rule–11 :

দুটো অতীতের কাজ যদি When, while, just, at that time বা নির্দিষ্ট সময়সহ উল্লেখ থাকে এবং Verb টির কাজ সময় নিয়ে ঘটে তবে Past Continuous Tense হয়।

যেমন: When he (come) to me last night, I (watch) T.V. **Ans:** came, was watching.
When I (read) , he (switch) the light off. **Ans:** was reading, switched

NB: এমনও হতে পারে দুটো কাজ-ই কিছু সময় ধরে চলছে, এক্ষেত্রে When ব্যবহার না করে While ব্যবহার শ্রেয় এবং উভয় অংশ Past Continuous Tense হবে।

While Reza (read) newspaper I (sing) a song. **Ans:** was reading, was singing
While Mark (read) a book, Martha (watch) TV. **Ans:** was reading, was watching
Or, Martha (watch) TV while Mark (read) a book. **Ans:** was watching, was reading
While we (walk) —, I saw my friend Raihan. **Ans :** were walking
The Titanic (carry) — 1316 passengers. **Ans :** was carrying

Rule–12 :

সাধারণত দুটো অতীতের কাজ after বা before দিয়ে যোগ করা থাকলে after এর পরের অংশ Past Perfect Tense এবং অপর অংশ Past Simple হয়। যেমন : The student (stand) up after the teacher had (enter) the class. **Ans.** stood; had entered.

Before এর প– র্বে Past Perfect এবং before এর পরে Past Simple হয়।

যেমন : I (reach) the station before the train

holycrossrajshahi.com

(leave). **Ans :** had reached, left

We (reach) — there before the gate (open) —. **Ans :** had reached, was opened

Rule–13 :

Before দিয়ে যুক্ত দুটি অতীতের কাজের মধ্যে যেটার সাথে since + time/for + time/how long থাকবে সেটা Past Perfect Progressive হবে।

Abu (live) in New York **for ten years** *before he moved to California*. **Ans :** had been living

Mahesh (find) — anywhere since yesterday. **Ans :** had not been found

Rule–14 :

যে কাজ ভবিষ্যতে হবে তা Future Simple Tense হবে। এক্ষেত্রে next, tomorrow, in future, hope/ expect that-এ ধরনের শব্দ থাকতে পারে।

I hope you (come) round soon. **Ans:** will come

Global temperature (continue)—to rise by 1.4° to 5.8° Celsius over the next century. **Ans:** will continue

Rule–15 :

ভবিষ্যতে দুটি কাজের মধ্যে যে কাজ আগে সম• ন্ন হবে সেটা Future Perfect হবে। এ ক্ষেত্রে সাধারণত ভবিষ্যতের দুটো কাজ after বা before দিয়ে যোগ করা থাকবে। মনে রাখতে হবে after এর পরের অংশ Future Perfect এবং অপর অংশ Present Simple হয়। before এর প– র্বে Future Perfect এবং before এর পরে Present Simple.

I (finish) the work before you come. **Ans:** shall/ will have finished

Rule–16 :

হয়ত এতক্ষণে কাজটি সম• ন্ন হয়ে থাকবে এমন অর্থ প্রকাশ করলে Future Perfect Tense হবে। এক্ষেত্রে সাধারণত by this time, by this month/ year উল্লেখ থাকে।

They (finish) the roof by Tuesday. **Ans:** will have finished

He (reach) Dhaka by this time. **Ans:** will have reached

Rule–17 :

বাক্যের একটি অংশ No sooner had/ Scarcely had/ Hardly had যুক্ত হলে অন্য অংশ Past Simple হবে।

No sooner had I started mowing the lawn than it [start] raining. **Ans :** started

I had scarcely sat down/Scarcely had I sat down to eat when the phone [ring]. **Ans :** rang

Rule–18 :

Since যদি conjunction of time হিসেবে ব্যবহৃত হয় সেক্ষেত্রে since এর প– র্বের অংশ Present Simple/ Present Perfect Tense হলে পরের অংশ Past Simple হবে, আর since এর প– র্বের অংশ Past Simple হলে পরের অংশ Past Perfect হবে।

Ten years (pass) since he left the village. **Ans :** have passed

Two days have passed away since he (die) . **Ans :** died

It was many years since I (see) him last. **Ans :** had seen

Rule–19 :

Since যদি conjunction of cause হিসেবে ব্যবহৃত হয় সেক্ষেত্রে উভয় অংশ সাধারণত একই Tense হবে।

Since the weather [be] bad, I could not go out. **Ans :** was

He [not come] since he was ill. **Ans :** did not come

Since you refuse to co-operate, I shall [force] take legal advice. **Ans :** be forced to

Rule–20 :

Since যদি বাক্যের শেষে (adverb of time হিসেবে) ব্যবহৃত হয় সেক্ষেত্রে Past Simple হবে, কারণ since এক্ষেত্রে ago অর্থ প্রকাশ করে।

He [die] two weeks since. **Ans:** died

Rule–21 :

fancy, wish, it's time, it's high time ইত্যাদির পর Past Simple হয়।

I wish I [have] the wings of a bird. **Ans : had**

I fancy I [turn] pale. **Ans : turned**

It is high time you (study) — for the Test Exam. **Ans:** studied

Note to remember:

it's time, it's high time-এর পর সরাসরি verb থাকলে to যোগে লিখতে হবে।

It is time (go). **Ans :** to go

Rule–22 :

Would that, wish এর পর ব্রাকেটে be verb থাকলে তা were হবে, অন্য verb থাকলে তার প– র্বে could হবে।

I wish I (to be) a king. **Ans:** were

I wish I (fly) in the sky. **Ans:** could fly

Rule–23 :

As if, as though যুক্ত বাক্যের প্রথম অংশ Present Tense হলে পরের অংশ Past Simple হবে, বাক্যের প্রথম অংশ Past Simple হলে পরের অংশ Past Perfect হবে।

He **speaks** as though he [know] every thing. **Ans:** knew

He **proceeded** as though I [not speak]. **Ans:** had not spoken

Rule–24 :

be verb (be, being, been, am, is, are, was, were)-এর পর যদি Verb থাকে এবং Subject টি যদি doer হয় তবে ing যোগ হবে এবং doer না হলে Past Participle হবে।

Education can serve what everyone is (look) — for. **Ans :** looking

Sound pollution is (occur) by the sounds ranging from 30 to 90 decibels or ever more. **Ans :** occured

When an invitation for a meal is (accept), it is regarded a definite appointment. **Ans :** accepted

Faxed messages are (receive) immediately. **Ans :** received

When are you (go) there. **Ans :** going

Communicative competence in English is urgently (need) — in our country. **Ans :** needed

A few days ago the marriage ceremony was (hold) — in a very befitting manner. **Ans :** held

holycrossrajshahi.com

Once they were (dominate) — by men. **Ans:** dominated
They have come out of kitchens and are (work) — hand in hand with man. **Ans :** working
I am now (write) — everything in detail. **Ans :** writing
It can be clearly (say) —. **Ans :** said
The spider was (try) — to reach the ceiling. **Ans:** trying

Rule–25 :

To/ Modal Auxiliaries এর পর যদি Verb থাকে এবং Subject যদি doer হয় তবে Verb এর ম– ল রূপ বসবে; এবং doer না হলে be + V^3 হবে।

I can't [swim]. **Ans:** swim
She could [be] in London or Paris or Tokyo nobody knows. **Ans:** be
I may [come] tomorrow if I have time. **Ans:** come
You need [not look] at me like that. **Ans:** not look
Can your mother [drive]? **Ans:** drive
He must [be] here by nine o'clock. **Ans:** be
The work will be [finish] by June 5. **Ans:** finished
Other countries can be [reach] within a second. **Ans:** reached
The textbooks designed for the classes XI–XII have to (revise) —. **Ans:** be revised
Our country will be able to (achieve) — an all-out prosperity. **Ans:** achieve
Your parents and relatives highly expect you to (educate) —. **Ans:** be educated
You can't (imagine) — how beautiful the University campus is. **Ans:** imagine
He fought several times with the British forces to (regain) — his country. **Ans:** regain
Very few people can (attain) — it. **Ans:** attain
They often find it quite impossible to (mend) — the damages. **Ans:** mend

NB : Modal auxiliaries : can, could, shall, should, will, would, may, might, must

Non-finite Verb based

Rule–26 :

একটি বাক্যাংশে ম– ল Verb থাকার পরও noun/ pronoun-এর আগে বা পরে যদি অতিরিক্ত (non-finite) verb থাকে তবে তা Present Participle বা Past Participle হবে। noun/pronoun ব্রাকেটযুক্ত verb এর কাজের সম• াদনকারী হলে Present Participle এবং noun/pronoun কাজটির সম• াদনকারী না হলে Past Participle হবে।

Example :

The machines (make) in a local market are working well. **Ans :** made
The girl (sit) in the corner is my sister. **Ans :** sitting
Firewood (burn) for cooking causes harm to our agriculture. **Ans :** burnt
I found him (sit) on the grass. **Ans :** sitting
I saw him (go) up the hill. **Ans :** going
The boy (stand) there is my brother. **Ans :** standing
Call the boy (stand) there. **Ans :** standing.
The textbooks (design) — for the classes XI–XII have to be revised. **Ans :** designed
I saw my friend Raihan (run) — towards us. **Ans :** running

Rule–27 :

একটি ম– ল বাক্যাংশ থাকার পরও যদি subject বিহীন একটি অংশ থাকে তবে subject বিহীন অংশের verb টি present participle বা past participle হবে। এক্ষেত্রে ম– ল verb-এর subject ব্রাকেটযুক্ত verb সম• াদনকারী হলে Present Participle হবে; আর subject কাজটির সম• াদনকারী না হলে তা Past Participle হবে।

Example:

(Lose) all my money, I went home. **Ans:** Losing
(Reject) by all his friends, he decided to become a monk. **Ans:** Rejected
(Open) the drawer, he took up the revolver. **Ans:** Opening
(Scold) by the teacher, the student remained silent. **Ans:** Scolded
(Close) the door, I went back to work. **Ans:** Closing
She went out (slam) the door. **Ans:** slamming
(Bite) twice by our dog, the post man refused to deliver our letter. **Ans:** Bitten
The sun (have) set, we reached home. **Ans:** having
(Sleep) for twelve hours, I felt marvelous. **Ans:** Having slept
(Complete) MA in English, he flew to America. **Ans:** Having completed
(Not know) what to do, I went home. **Ans:** Not knowing
(Not have) been invited, he got angry. **Ans:** Not having
One day, he sat in a lonely cave (brood) — over his sad lot. **Ans:** brooding
The Qazi solemnized the marriage (recite) — the related verses from the holy Quran. **Ans:** reciting

Rule–28 :

Preposition এর পর ব্রাকেটযুক্ত verb + object থাকলে তার সাথে ing যোগ করতে হবে।

in, at, on, upto, into, for, from, with, without, before, after, since, against, beneath, under, of, about, up, by, beside, above, near, across, through, over.

1. One should not visit someone's house without first (telephone) them. **Ans :** telephoning
2. When (greet) someone in Britain, a handshake is expected. **Ans :** greeting
3. Decibel is a unit of (measure) sound. **Ans :** measuring
4. The power of (use) language properly means communicative language. **Ans :** using

Note : *সাধারণত verb এর শেষে vowel (a, e, i, o, u) + consonant (x, y ছাড়া) থাকলে participle করার সময় consonant টি double করতে হয়। সাধারণত verb এর শেষে consonant + একটি e থাকলে ing যোগ করার সময় e টি বাদ যাবে।*

Rule–29 :

নিম্নলিখিত শব্দগুলির পর ব্রাকেটযুক্ত verb -টির সাথে ing বা to যোগ করতে হয়।

to + verb	verb + ing
agree, ask, attempt, choose, decide, expect, fail, hesitate, hope, learn, offer, promise, prepare, refuse, seem, threaten, wish, want, *start, begin, continue, intend, like, hate*	admit, avoid, can't help, could not help, dislike, enjoy, finish, give up, feel like, keep, keep on, carry on, miss, mind, suggest, object to, look forward to, with an eye to, with a view to, refer to, be used to, committed to, get used to, be/get accustomed to, *start, begin, continue, intend, like, hate* , addicted to, adverse to,

We cannot help (learn) — English. Ans: learning

Rule–30 :

before/ after/ till/ until/while এর পরপরই verb থাকলে তার সাথে ing যোগ হবে।

After [talk] you I always feel better. **Ans:** talking to

After [annoy] everybody, he went home. **Ans:** having annoyed

Depress clutch before [change] gear. **Ans:** changing

While (bid) — farewell to my sister, my parents burst into tears. **Ans:** bidding

Rule–31 :

Get, have, remain- এর পর verb এর Past Participle হবে।

The war had (bring) — great misery to the whole world. **Ans:** brought

They have (come) — out of kitchens. **Ans:** come

Computer has (bring) — about a revolutionary change. **Ans:** brought

Rule–32 :

Verb টি Subject/Object হলে Verb এর ing বা infinitive হবে।

(Walk) — is a good exercise.

Ans : Walking/ To walk

Rule–33 : অতীত Verb এর Object Clause এ কোন Verb থাকলে ঐ Verb টি অনুরূপ Past Tense হবে।

He said that he (come) — the next day.

Ans : would come

Practice

A.01. Rewrite the following sentences with the correct form of verbs.

(a) The mother is — her baby. (feed)
(b) Kajal was — a story about a handsome person. (write)
(c) Babul has already — the vocabulary test. (take)
(d) He — with his parents. (live)
(e) The sun is — brightly. (shine)

02. Rewrite the following sentences with the correct form of verbs.

(a) The patient is very ill. The nurse — after her. (look)
(b) It was a hot summer day. A man — through a village. (pass)
(c) After a month's fasting Eid-ul-Fitre is —. (celebrate)
(d) Bangladesh—independent in 1971. (become)
(e) Birds — in trees. (live)

03. Rewrite the following sentences with the correct form of verbs. (an example is given for you).

Example : It is 6.30 am. My father —— —— to the radio. (listen)

Ans. It is 6.30 am. My father is listening to the radio.

(a) Don't disturb him. He ———— now. (work)
(b) The water —— ——. I will make a cup of tea. (boil)
(c) The students —— —— on the bus. (get)
(d) Go and open the door. The milkman —— —— at the door. (knock)
(e) Jim swims everyday. But he —— not —— today. (swim)

04. Rewrite the following sentences with the correct form of verbs. (an example is given for you).

Example: Walk fast. The train ____ (come).

Answer: Walk fast. The train is coming.

(a) Don't talk. The baby ____ (sleep)
(b) Mofiz is a good student. He ___ (read) regularly.
(c) Rubina generally sits at the front, but today she is ___ (sit) at the back.
(d) The students are happy. They ___ (go) to a book fair tomorrow.
(e) We usually play badminton. Today we ____ (play) tennis.

05. Rewrite the following sentences with the correct form of verb. (an example is given for you).

Example : Do not go out now. It ____ (rain).

Answer : It is raining.

(a) My parents live in a village. But I ____ (live) in the city at present.
(b) Don't disturb him. He ____ (work) now.
(c) The sports competitions are over. The Headmaster ____ (give) the winners some medals.
(d) Go and open the door. The milkman ____ (knock) at the door.
(e) We have ____ (learn) our lessons.

B. Fill in the gaps with the right forms of verbs in the brackets. $0.5 \times 8 = 4$

01. Meena and Mithu (a) — (see) ripe mangoes hanging in the tree. They (b) — (climb) up the

holycrossrajshahi.com

tree and picked one. Meena (c) — (hand) the mango to her mother. Mother (d) — (take) it and cut into two halves. But as she cut, she made one portion bigger than the other and (e) — (give) the bigger one to Raju. Meena was (f) — (shock) and sad. She noticed that special attention was (g) — (give) to Raju. Meena (h) — ('say' in negative) anything to her mother.

02. Life (a) — (be) not a bed of roses. Though true, it (b) — ('say' in passive) that living honestly is hard in modern society. Even our field of education has become (c) — (corrupt) in many ways. Students (d) — ('respect' in negative) their teachers properly. So, it may (e) — (be) hard to be an ideal teacher. But education (f) — ('call' in passive) the backbone of a nation. So, we (g) — ('do' in future) our best to overcome all the oppositions. The Govt. should (h) — (take) proper steps in this regard.

03. I (a) — ('go' in continuous) to introduce you with a very good friend of mine. He (b) — ('go' in future) to Dhaka and (c) — (stay) for about a week. Please (d) — (allow) him to stay at our house and (e) — (give) him guidance. He (f) — (be) quite intelligent and famous for his pleasing manners. Anyway, I (g) — (make) brilliant result in the last exam. I (h) — (obtain) GPA 5.
Your affectionate,
Emu.

04. Who (a) — ('like' in negative) flowers? A flower (b) — (be) the symbol of beauty. He who (c) — (love) flowers, cannot (d) — (harm) anybody. We become (e) — (fascinate) at the fragrance and beauty of rose. Its fragrance (f) — (refresh) our mind. There goes a wise saying, "(g) — (give) up smoking and (h) — (inhale) the fragrance of flower".

05. Daily life (a) — (mean) the list of work that a person (b) — (do) from dawn to dusk. A systematic daily life (c) — (be) a must for everybody. I (d) — (be) a student. I have a well-regulated daily life. I (e) — (get) up from bed early in the morning. After (f) — (take) the ablution, I say my Fazr prayer. Then I go out for a walk. (g) — (come) back, I take bath and have my breakfast which my mother (h) — (keep) ready for me.

06. Many of you have probably (a) — (hear) about Khan Jahan Ali of Bagerhat. He (b) — (be) a brave warrior, a powerful ruler and a devoted preacher. Many people (c) — (know) him as a great saint. He is famous for his piety and philanthropic activities. Nothing is definitely (d) — (know) about the early life of Khan Jahan Ali. Historical evidences (e) — (show) that he had served for several years in the court of Delhi during the Tughlag period. He was the first man to (f) — (preach) Islam in that area. Besides preaching the religion, he (g) — (adorn) the city with many mosques, tanks, roads and public buildings. He (h) — (found) the Shat Gambuj Mosque which has been declared as World Heritage Site. We will not forget him for his contribution.

07. Bangladesh (a) — (consider) by world communities as a country of all possibilities. We can (b) — (sacrifice) our lives with a view to (c) — (uphold) the rightful position of our mother tongue and for (d) — (achieve) freedom. On the other hand, we can (e) — (demonstrate) our ungratefulness by killing the organiser of independence. We (f) — (struggle) for democracy and subsequently strangle it while in (g) — (rule) the country. We can become frequently world champion in corruption. Again we vow to (h) — (stamp) out it from our national life. We have already been successful to blot the spot of being the most corrupted country in the world. What a strange nation we are!

08. Education (a) — (enlighten) mankind. It (b) — (compare) to light which removes the darkness of ignorance and helps us distinguish between right and wrong. Ex-president, Julius Nyerere of Tanzania way back in 1974, (c) — (say) in an international conference that the primary purpose of education was the liberation of man from the restrictions of habits and attitudes which limit his humanity. In our country the government (d) — (start) 'Food for Education'- programme so that every child can get proper education. So, we (e) — (come) forward to make this attempt a success. As a part of motivation, the government has started (f) — (do) such activities as it may (g) — (bring) more children to school. In order to (h) — (ensure) maximum benefit from education, we must educate our children morally having love for humanity.

09. The world (a) — (get) warmer because of pollution. Every year millions of people all over the world (b) — (die) unnecessarily as a result of pollution. In the recent years there (c) — (be) alarming reports that the world's climate (d) — (undergo) a significant change. All these reports (e) — (provide) strong evidence that world temperatures (f) — (increase) day by day. Climatologists (g) — (predict) that mid way through the next century temperatures may have (h) — (become) as much as 4°C. This could rise sea levels and thereby flood costal areas and farm lands.

10. Food (a) — (be) our basic need. But this food is (b) — (contaminate) by the avaricious businessmen who (c) — (crave) for money. Having (d) — (consume) the adulterated food, people (e) — (fall) a victim to diseases of various kinds. For the exemplary punishment of the dishonest businessmen, the (f) — (existing) laws

must be (g) — (rectified) for the betterment of the common public health. It is (h) — (expected) that strict law will be implemented with a view to curbing the harmful act of food contamination.

Answers

A.

01. (a) feeding (b) writing (c) taken (d) lives (e) shining

02. (a) is looking (b) was passing (c) celebrated (d) became (e) live

03. (a) is working (b) is boiling (c) are getting (d) is knocking (e) is not swimming.

04. (a) is sleeping (b) reads (c) is sitting (d) will go (e) are playing

05. (a) am living (b) is working (c) is giving (d) is knocking (e) learnt

B.

01. (a) saw (b) climbed (c) handed (d) took (e) gave (f) shocked (g) given (h) didn't say

02. (a) is (b) is said (c) corrupted (d) do not respect (e) be (f) is called (g) will do (h) take

03. (a) am going (b) will go (c) will stay (d) allow (e) give (f) is (g) made (h) obtained

04. (a) doesn't like (b) is (c) loves (d) harm (e) fascinated (f) refreshes (g) give (h) inhale

05. (a) means (b) does (c) is (d) am (e) get (f) taking (g) coming (h) keeps

06. (a) heard (b) was (c) know (d) known (e) show (f) preach (g) adorned (h) founded

07. (a) is considered (b) sacrifice (c) upholding (d) achieving (e) demonstrate (f) can struggle (g) ruling (h) stamp

08. (a) enlightens (b) is compared (c) said (d) has started (e) should come (f) doing (g) bring (h) ensure

09. (a) is getting (b) die (c) were (d) is undergoing (e) provide (f) is increasing (g) predict (h) become

10. (a) is (b) being contaminated (c) crave (d) consumed (e) fall (f) existing (g) rectified (h) expected

Adverbs 11

যে Word কোনো Verb, Adjective বা Adverb এর প্রকৃতি বোঝায়, তাকে Adverb বলে। নিচের উদাহরণগুলো লক্ষ কর :

Nawshad Chowdhury was writing busily in his big room. His son Rafiq rushed excitedly into the room and shouted loudly, 'Fire, Fire! The kitchen is on fire!'



উপরের উদাহরণগুলোতে busily, excitedly, loudly ইত্যাদি শব্দগুলো Verb যথাক্রমে writing, rushed ও shouted কীভাবে কার্য সম• াদন করে তা প্রকাশ করছে। এগুলো Adverb। তবে Adverb কখনা কখনো Adjective বা অন্য আরেকটি Adverb-কেও modify করতে পারে। যেমন :

Tania is **very** beautiful.

She walks **very** slowly.

ব্যবহার অনুযায়ী Adverb কে প্রধানত তিন ভাগে ভাগ করা যায়। যথা : Simple Adverb, Interrogative Adverb, Relative Adverb।

(a) Simple Adverb : যে Adverb সরাসরি কোনো Verb বা Adjective বা Sentence-কে modify করে তার রূপ, অবস্থা ইত্যাদি বুঝায়, তাকে Simple Adverb বলে। যেমন :

We went early**.** He can run fast**.**

Certainly he is guilty.

অর্থ অনুযায়ী Simple Adverb-কে আবার নিম্নলিখিত ভাগে ভাগ করা যায়। যথা :

(i) Adverb of Manner :

যে Adverb কোনো Verb এর কার্য সম• ন্ন হওয়ার ধরন বা রকম, উপায় নির্দেশ করে তাকে Adverb of Manner বলে। যেমন : slowly, quickly, calmly, loudly, silently ইত্যাদি।

The man is running slowly.

He talks loudly.

(ii) Adverb of Place :

যে Adverb কোনো Verb-এর কার্য সম• ন্ন হওয়ার স্থান নির্দেশ করে, তাকে Adverb of Place বলে। যেমন : Here, there, everywhere, anywhere, up, down, below, above ইত্যাদি।

Come here, boys. The ship went down.

(iii) Adverb of Time :

যে Adverb কোনো Verb-এর কার্য সম• ন্ন হওয়ার সময় নির্দেশ করে, তাকে Adverb of Time বলে। যেমন : Now, then, today, tomorrow, yesterday, early, daily ইত্যাদি।

He will come here today. He goes to school early.

(iv) Adverb of Frequency:

যে Adverb দ্বারা Verb এর কাজ কত বার বা কত ঘন ঘন সম• ন্ন হয় তা বুঝায়, তাকে Adverb of Frequency বলে। যেমন : Always, often, sometimes, again ইত্যাদি। He often comes here. He always speaks the truth.

(v) Sentence Adverb :

যে Adverb কোনো word-কে modify না করে পুরো sentence-কে modify করে এবং সাধারণত speaker-এর মতামত প্রকাশ করে, তাকে Sentence Adverb বলে। যেমন: surely, certainly ইত্যাদি। Clearly, he has no excuse for such behaviour . Frankly, I don't care about your problems

কখনো কখনো প– র্বের বাক্যের সাথে চিন©াগত সম• র্ক প্রকাশ করে। যেমন: accordingly, however, consequently, hence, moreover, similarly, and therefore ইত্যাদি।

England played well in the first half. However, in the second half their weaknesses were revealed.

(vi) Adverb of Degree :

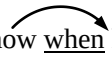
যে Adverb কোনো পরিমাণ বা মাত্রা নির্দেশ করে, তাকে Adverb of Degree বলে। এগুলো সাধারণত Adjective বা

holycrossrajshahi.com

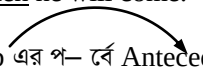
আরেকটি Adverb-কে modify করে। যেমন : very, quite, extremely, too ইত্যাদি। The place is very nice.
The old man walks very slowly.
He is too weak to walk.

(b) Interrogative Adverb:
যে Adverb দ্বারা প্রশ্ন জিজ্ঞাসা করা বুঝায়, তাকে Interrogative Adverb বলে।
Why are you crying? How are you?
Where does he live?

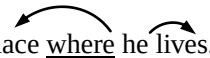
(c) Conjunctive/ Relative Adverb:
যে Adverb কোনো Verb-কে modify করে এবং দুটি Clause-কে সংযুক্ত করে, তাকে Conjunctive Adverb বলে। যেমন :
I know where he lives.



I don't know when he will come.



তবে এসব Adverb এর প– র্বে Antecedent থাকলে তাকে Relative Adverb বলে। যেমন :



I know the place where he lives.

Practice



A. Find out the *adverbs* in the following sentences.
(a) The bird sings sweetly.
(b) He is very happy.
(c) They work very hard.
(d) She can sing well.
(e) The children are shouting happily.
(f) The soldiers fought bravely.
(g) They are running fast.
(h) The teacher speaks softly.
(i) Shahana can dance beautifully.
(j) The bottle was quite empty.

B. Fill in the gaps using simple adverbs from the list given in the box.

01.

forward	before	severely	Monday	too

(a) — many cooks spoil the broth.
(b) I have heard this —.
(c) The patient is suffering —.
(d) Ambition urges me to move —.
(e) He went off on —.

02.

differently	somewhat	kindly	shamefully	quite

(a) Are you — sure?
(b) Father is — better.
(c) We were very — received.
(d) I see things — now.
(e) He has been — treated.

03.

much	well	out	never

(a) That is — said.
(b) I am — relieved to hear it.
(c) Her son is — in lran.
(d) They found the door — and came in.
(e) I wonder you — told me.

04.

surely	so	together	where	rather

(a) Once or twice we have met —.
(b) The walk was — long.
(c) I — expect him tomorrow.
(d) The patient is — better today.
(e) — is Abdul?

05.

round	far	so	when	much

(a) The railway station is — off.
(b) The patient is — worse today.
(c) He could not speak, he was — angry.
(d) He turned his chair —.
(e) — did you come?

C. Fill in the gaps using adverbs from the boxes.

01.

terribly	gradually	seasonally	most	namely

In winter we see that innumerable new migratory birds come to our country. These birds, (a) — 'Guest birds' come to our country in winter from Siberia. When the (b) — biting cold in Siberia reaches beyond the limit, these guest birds migrate to our land (c) —. They come (d) — because of biting cold and for want of food. The (e) — wondering fact is that they fly thousands of miles at a stretch.

02.

always	before	calmly	firmly	swiftly

Tigers are known as ferocious animals. A tiger kills (a) —. It (b) — charges from the side or the rear. With a quick leap, it topples the victim instantly and breaks its neck. The victim does not have the slightest warning (c) —. The tiger waits (d) —, jaws (e) — locked in place until the victim falls flat.

03.

very	generally	there	heavily	very

An ordinary garment worker in our country leads a (a) — laborious life. Her day begins (b) — early in the morning and ends at about 10 pm. (c) — she walks to her factory along with other girls working (d) —. Sometimes she has to get on a (e) — crowded public bus.

04.

only	easily	greatly	moreover	generously

Nature has given her resources to us more (a) — than many other countries of the world. Think about our soil. It is soft and fertile. Our farmers who have (b) — simple hand made tools can (c) — plough the soil. It helps us (d) — to get a good harvest. (e) —, we are blessed with hundreds of rivers.

5.

finally	thirdly	firstly	everywhere	secondly

Teachers are the makers of a nation. They are respected (a) — for their contribution. They must have certain qualities. (b) — they must be punctual and regular. (c) — they must have a sense of duty and responsibility. (d) — they are well qualified for their respective subject. (e) —

they must have sound class controlling power as well as a high sense of morality.

Answers

A. (a) sweetly (b) very (c) very (d) well (e) happily (f) bravely (g) fast (h) softly (i) beautifully (j) empty

B.

01. (a) Too (b) before (c) severely (d) forward (e) Monday

02. (a) quite (b) somewhat (c) kindly (d) differently (e) shamefully

03. (a) well (b) much (c) well (d) out (e) never

04. (a) together (b) so (c) rather (d) surely (e) Where

05. (a) far (b) much (c) so (d) round (e) when

C.

01. (a) namely (b) terribly (c) gradually (d) seasonally (e) most

02. (a) swiftly (b) always (c) before (d) calmly (e) firmly

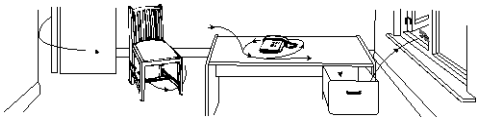
03. (a) very (b) very (c) Generally (d) there (e) heavily

04. (a) generously (b) only (c) easily (d) greatly (c) Moreover

05. (a) everywhere (b) Firstly (c) Secondly (d) Thirdly (e) Finally

Preposition 12

Preposition একটি noun বা pronoun বা noun equivalent-এর প– র্বে বসে তার সঙ্গে বাক্যের অন্য word এর সম• র্ক বুঝিয়ে দেয়। preposition এর পর ব্যবহৃত noun বা pronoun বা equivalent কে preposition এর object বলে। preposition এর নিজস্ব পরিপ– র্ণ অর্থ না থাকলেও এগুলো বাক্যের মধ্যে বসে বাক্যের অর্থকে প– র্ণতা দেয়। নিম্নের ছবিটি দেখ এবং প্যারাটিতে preposition এর ব্যবহার লক্ষ কর।



A fly came in ***through*** the door. It flew ***under*** the chair. It crawled ***up*** the chair-leg. It stopped ***on*** the desk for a moment. It went ***around*** the telephone. It flew ***into*** the drawer. It went ***out of*** the window.

Bold-italic font-এর শব্দগুলো হলো prepositions. লক্ষ করলে দেখা যাবে preposition গুলো বাক্যের বিভিন্ন স্থানে বসেছে। এখন জেনে নেই preposition কোথায় কোথায় বসে।

Preposition বিভিন্ন ক্ষেত্রে ব্যবহৃত হয় :

- দুটি noun/ pronoun/ noun phrase এর মাঝে: The boy in the class room, is my brother.
- Verb ও Adverbials এর মাঝে: I live in Dhaka.
- Adjective যদি তার পরবর্তী NP কে modify না করে তবে মাঝে: I am proud of my son.

Kinds of preposition

গঠন ও কার্যের ভিন্নতা অনুসারে Preposition কে ছয় ভাগে ভাগ করা যায়।

1. **Simple :** সাধারণত একটি word দ্বারা simple preposition হয়। যেমন: at, on, in, for, with, of, off, etc.
2. **Double :** যখন দুটি simple preposition যুক্ত হয়ে একটি preposition এর মত কাজ করে তখন তাকে double preposition বলে।
   যেমন: into (in + to), within (with + in), etc.
3. **Compound :** noun, adjective বা adverb এর প– র্বে simple preposition যুক্ত হয়ে যে preposition গঠিত হয় তাকে compound preposition বলে।
   যেমন: across (on + cross), before (by + fore), beside (by + side), below (by + low)
4. **Phrase :** একটি phrase যখন একটি preposition এর মত কাজ করে তখন তাকে phrase preposition বলে। যেমন: in front of, out of, because of etc.
5. **Participle :** কতগুলো present participle এবং past participle অনেক সময় preposition এর মত কাজ করে তখন তাকে participle preposition বলে।
   যেমন: regarding, concerning.
6. **Disguised :** কোনো কোনো ক্ষেত্রে on, at, of এর পরিবর্তে a বা o ব্যবহৃত হয় তখন তাকে disguised preposition বলে।
   যেমন: It is 10 o'clock (o'clock = of clock), He went a (a = on) hunting.

কখন কোনো preposition

Preposition এর সাথে বাংলা বিভক্তির কিছুটা মিল রয়েছে। তাই বোঝার সুবিধার্থে নিম্নে preposition ও বিভক্তির একটি তুলনাম– লক ছক দেয়া হলো :

Rules	বিভ□ক্তি	Preposition	Example
1	১মা	zero preposition	Mita reads a book. (মিতা বই পড়ে।) I go home (আমি বাড়ি যাই।)
2	২য়া (কে, রে, প্রতি)	to	The boy goes **to** college. (বালকটি কলেজের **দিকে** যায়।) I gave a book **to** the boy. (আমি বালকটি**কে** একটি বই দিলাম।)
3	৩য়া (কে, রে, প্রতি)	by (সম• াদনকারী), with (যা দিয়ে করা হয়)	The table was decorated **with** flower **by** Rahim. (টেবিলটি রহিমের **সারা** ফুল **দিয়ে** সাজানো হয়েছিল।)
4	৪র্থী (কে, রে, প্রতি)	for	He bought a shirt **for** me.(সে আমার **জন**□একটি শার্ট কিনেছিল।)
5	৫মী (হতে, থেকে, চেয়ে)	from, than	I come **from** Perojpur. (আমি পিরোজপুর **থেকে** এসেছি।) He is better **than** Rafi. (সে রাফির **চেয়ে** ভালো।)
6	৬ষ্ঠী	of	The pen **of** Rifat writes

	(র, এর)		well. (রিফাতের কলমটি ভালো লেখে।)
7	৭মী (এ,য়, তে)	in, at	I live **in** Dhaka. (আমি ঢাকায় থাকি।) He is **at** home now. (সে এখন বাড়িতে আছে।)

ব্যবহারগত দিক দিয়ে আমরা দুই ধরনের preposition পাই। যথা:
(i) Preposition of time
(ii) Prepostion of position and place.
এখন বহুল ব্যবহৃত preposition নিয়ে আলোচনা করা হল।

☑ Prepositions of time :

Preposition	Use	Examples
Rule-8 In (মধ্যে)	(i) মাস	He was born in July.
	(ii) বছর	I passed HSC in 2003.
	(iii) ঋতু	I was there in autumn.
	(iv) রাত ছাড়া দিনের অন্যান্য ভাগ	I will come in the morning/the afternoon.
	(v) নির্দিষ্ট কিছু সময়কালের শেষদিকে	I will meet you in a minute.
Rule-9 at	(i) শুধু রাতের ক্ষেত্রে	The moon shines at night.
	(ii) ঘড়ির সময়	The ceremony began at 2 pm.
	(iii) উৎসব	Our college remains closed at Christmas.
	(iv) বয়স	She got married at 55.
	(v) fixed phrases	at the same time
Rule-10 on	(i) সপ্তাহের দিন	Marriage ceremony will be held on Sunday.
	(ii) মাসের তারিখ	Classes will start on September 12.
	(iii) দিনযুক্ত উৎসবের নাম	We will go to cinema on Christmas day.
	(iv) দিনের বিশেষ ভাগ এর সাথে তারিখ থাকলে	She was lost on the morning of September the 11th
	(v) কোনো ঘটনা ঘটার সাথে সাথে বুঝতে	On reading the letter, she started weeping.
Rule-11 after	(i) কোনো মুহ– র্তে, ঘটনা, অবস্থা বা নির্দিষ্ট কিছু সময়কাল পর বুঝাতে (ii) পুনঃপুনঃ	(i) I will meet you after school. (ii) He fired shot after shot.
Rule-12 before	নির্দিষ্ট কোনো মুহ– র্তে, ঘটনা বা অবস্থার প– র্বে	I will return the book before Christmas.
Rule-13 between	(i) দু'য়ের মধ্যে	They will see you between Monday and Friday.
Rule-14 by	নির্দিষ্ট মুহ– র্তে, সময়, দিন, মাস, বছর এর মধ্যে	You must complete your registration by August. এভাবে by January, by 1999
Rule-15 during	নির্দিষ্ট দিনের ভাগ, দিন, মাস, বছর, ছুটি, অনুষ্ঠানের পুরো সময়	during the holidays, during the winter, during my service
Rule-16 for	নির্দিষ্ট কিছু সময় ধরে অর্থাৎ কতক্ষণ ধরে হ" ছ তা বুঝায়	for three weeks, for five years, for five minutes. You have been ill for two weeks.
Rule-17 from ... to from ... till, until	কোনো একটা মুহ– র্ত থেকে অন্য একটা মুহ– র্ত পর্যন্ত	from Monday to Wednesday, from Monday till Wednesday, from Monday until Wednesday
Rule-18 since	নির্দিষ্ট একটা মুহ– র্ত পর্যন্ত কতটুকু সময় তা বুঝানোর জন্য	since Monday
Rule-19 throughout/ through	ব্যাপিয়া / পুরো	He danced throughout the night. It rained the whole night through.
Rule-20 Till/until	নির্দিষ্ট মুহ– র্তে, সময়, দিন, মাস, বছর পর্যন্ত	till tomorrow, until tomorrow
Rule-21 within	নির্দিষ্ট কিছু সময়কাল এর মধ্যে	within a day, within two days/weeks/months

☑ Prepositions of position and direction :

Rule-22 : Above

(i) কোনো নির্দিষ্ট তাপমাত্রা, উ" চতা, শব্দ, পদমর্যাদার চেয়ে বেশি : The temperature is three degrees above zero.

Rule-23 : About

(i) স্থান বা কাল সংখ্যা অর্থে কাছাকাছি / আশেপাশে : He is walking about the street.

(ii) সম্বন্ধে, সম• র্কে বিষয়ে: I know nothing about the incident.

Rule-24 : Across

(i) কোনো কিছু তলের এপার থেকে ওপারে যাওয়া(প্রস্থের দিক দিয়ে) The girl is running across the road.

Rule-25 : After

(i) কারো পর বা কোনো কিছুর পর : C comes after B.

Rule-26 : Against

(i) শারীরিক বা বুদ্ধিবৃত্তিক দিক দিয়ে কারো বা কোনো কিছুর বিপরীত বা বির" দ্ধ:He was leaning against the wall.

Rule-27 : Along

(i) দৈর্ঘ্যের দিক দিয়ে বরাবর যাওয়া/ অবস্থান: The man is walking along the corridor.

Rule-28 : Among

(i) তিন/ততোধিকের মধ্যে থাকা, কাজ করা, কিছু দেওয়া: We are working among the poor.

Rule-29 : Around

(i) কোনো কিছু চারদিকে ঘোরা, অবস্থান করা: There are many things around us

Rule-30 : At

(i) কোনো নির্দিষ্ট দিকে দৃষ্টি /তাক: She often smiles at me. এভাবে look at, stare at, wave at, wink at, shout at, rush at somebody. They started throwing stones at them.

(ii) বিল্ডিং, রেস্তোরাঁ, থিয়েটার, দোকান, স্কুল ইত্যাদির নামের প– র্বে, লেখাপড়া বা চাকুরির স্থানের প– র্বে: She works at the hospital.

(iii) ঠিকানার প– র্বে: He lives at 322/F Rampura, Dhaka.

(iv) ম– ল্যের হার বা দ্র" ততার গতি বুঝাতে: I am now driving at 70 mph.

(v) নির্দিষ্ট কিছু বিশেষ্য ও বিশেষণ এর পর: He is good at English. এভাবে clever at, skilled at, hopeless at, busy at, impatient at, amused at, delighted at, puzzled at, genius at, anger at.

Rule-31 : Before

(i) কারো উপস্থিতিতে: I can tell this before all.

Rule-32 : Behind

(i) কোনো ব্যক্তির বা বস্তুর পিছনে অবস্থান করা বা কিছু করা: Work behind the counter.

Rule-33 : Below

(i) কোনো উ" চতা, তাপমাত্রা, অবস্থান করা বা পদমর্যাদার চেয়ে নিচে অবস্থান: Do not write below this line.

Rule-34 : Beside

(i) কোনো ব্যক্তি বা বস্তুর পাশে: A table by/ beside the bed.

Rule-35 : Besides/with

(i) কোনো কিছু করা বা থাকা ছাড়াও: Besides a table, I need a chair.

Rule-36 : Between

(i) দু'য়ের মধ্যে বুঝাতে : Distribute the cake between two brothers.

Rule-37 : By

(i) যার দ্বারা বা যার মাধ্যমে কাজটি সম• াদিত হয় তার প– র্বে: Those who became great have become so by hard labour.

Rule-38 : Close to

(i) নিকটে: Our house is close to the supermarket.

Rule-39 : Down

(i) নিচের দিকে পড়েছে বা নামছে বুঝাতে: The man is coming down the stairs.

Rule-40 : For

(i) যার উদ্দেশ্যে থাকে বা রওনা হয় তার প– র্বে: I was ready for the function.

(ii) কোনো কিছু বা কারো পক্ষে, জন্য, সহায়তায় কিছু করা: Here is a piece of advice for you.

Rule-41 : From

(i) দুর্ঘটনায় মারা যাওয়া : Two or three frogs died from injury.

(ii) যে উপাদান দিয়ে তৈরি -এক্ষেত্রে উপাদানটি পুরোপুরি পরিবর্তিত হয়ে যায়: Paper is made from bamboo.

(iii) কোনো কিছু থেকে দ– রে থাকা বুঝাতে : He will be aloof from civilized world.

Rule-42 : In (মধ্যে)

(i) একটি ত্রিমাত্রিক স্থানের মধ্যে অবস্থিত বা কিছু হ" ছ: The world we live in is full of different things.

(ii) ক্ষেত্র বুঝাতে : I got first prize in the debate competition. *[DB '09]*

Rule-43 : In front of

(i) সামনাসামনি: Our house is in front of the supermarket.

Rule-44 : Inside

(i) কোনো ত্রিমাত্রিক স্থানের ভিতরে অবস্থান বা কিছু করা: You should not stay inside the room

Rule-45 : Into

(i) বাহির থেকে কোনো ত্রিমাত্রিক স্থানের ভিতরে নেয়া বা যাওয়া: We are moving our bed into our room.

Rule-46 : Near

(i) কোনো কিছুর নিকটে: Our house is near the supermarket.

Rule-48 : Of

(i) এর / সম্বন্ধে, যোগস– ত্র , মালিকানা বোঝাতে: Description of the project/incident.

(ii) যে উৎস দিয়ে জাত: He comes of a noble family.

Rule-49 : Off

(i) কোনো নির্দিষ্ট তল থেকে বাইরে যাওয়া বা বি" ছন্ন হওয়া বুঝায়: The cat jumped off the roof.

Rule-50 : On (উপর)

(i) কোনো তলের উপর অবস্থান বা কিছু ঘটা: The girl is on the mat.

(ii) কোনো কমিটি, স্টাফ বা বোর্ডের সদস্য বুঝাতে: He is on the committee.

(iii) কোনো 'বিষয়ের' উপর আলোচনা বা লেখা বুঝাতে : The debate competition is on the topic "The importane of English."

Rule-51 : Out of

(i) কোনো ত্রিমাত্রিক স্থানের ভিতর থেকে বাইরে নেওয়া বা যাওয়া বা অবস্থান: The villagers were out of their cottages.

Rule-52 : Outside

(i) কোনো ত্রিমাত্রিক স্থানের বাইরে: Can you wait outside the room?

Rule-53 : Over

(i) না ছুঁয়ে সরাসরি যে জিনিসের উপর আছে তার প– র্বে: The sun shone brightly over the village.

(ii) যার উপর দিয়ে যায়: The cat jumped over the wall.

(iii) এপার থেকে ওপার পর্যন্ত বিস্তৃত: a bridge over the river.

Rule-54 : Through

(i) কোনো কিছুর মধ্য দিয়ে অতিক্রম করা: His heroes pass through ups and downs of life.

Rule-55 : Throughout

(i) ব্যাপিয়া / জুড়ে: Protest was arranged throughout the country.

Rule-56 : To

(i) কোনো স্থানের দিকে/ উদ্দেশ্যে/ প্রতি/ অভিমুখে: Take me to the airport please.

Rule-57 : Under/beneath

(i) কোনো কিছুর নিচে/ কোনো কিছু দিয়ে ঢাকা কিন্তু তল ছুঁয়ে আছে: The cat is under the table.

(ii) কোনো নির্দিষ্ট পরিমাণ/দ– রত্ব/সময়/ বয়সের নিচে: If you are under 35, you can apply.

Rule-58 : Up

(i) নিচ থেকে উপরে যাওয়া: He went up the hill.

Rule-59 : With

(i) যে জিনিসের সাহায্যে করা হয়: A jug filled with water, write with pen.

(ii) সঙ্গে/ সাথে: You should communicate with others in English.

Rule-60 : Without

(i) ব্যতীত: To work without pause is tiresome.

Appropriate Preposition

ইংরেজিতে Noun, Adjective এবং Verb-এর পরে যে বিশেষ Preposition বিশেষ অর্থে বসে তাকে Appropriate Preposition বলে। নিচে কিছু উদাহরণ দেওয়া হলো : (**Note :** sth → something; swh → somewhere; sb → somebody)

abide by sth (কোনো কিছু মেনে চলা)–We have to abide by social rules.

abide in swh (কোথাও থাকা)–Man abides in society.

access/ accessible to sth/swh (কোনো কিছুতে প্রবেশাধিকার)–The students had easy access to his room.

according to sth(কোনো কিছু অনুসারে)–He leads his life according to religion.

accustomed to sth (কোনো কিছুতে অভ্যস্ত)–A man accustomed to hard work, is not afraid.

addicted to sth (খারাপ কাজে আসক্ত)–People addicted to smoking, often suffer from various diseases.

admit sb to/into swh (ভর্তি হওয়া)–But I want to get myself admitted into Ideal School.

afraid of sth/ sb (কোনো কিছু নিয়ে ভীত)–He is not afraid of any work.

agree with sb about/on sth (কারো সাথে একমত হওয়া)–I agree with my mother about most things.

agree to a suggestion/ proposal (প্রস্তাবে একমত হওয়া)–I agree to your plan.

aloof from sth/ sb (কোনো কিছু থেকে দ– রে থাকা)–You should not keep yourself aloof from the civilized world.

alternative to sth (কোনো কিছুর বিকল্প)–There is no alternative to death.

ambition for being sth/doing sth (কোনো কিছুর জন্য উ" চাকাগুক্ষা)–He has strong ambition for worldly belongings.

angry with sb about/at/over sth (রাগান্বিত)–I am angry with you about your delay.

annoyed with sb at/ by/ about sth (কোনো কারণে কারো প্রতি বিরক্ত)– He got very annoyed with me about my carelessness.

anxious about /for sth/sb (কোনো কিছু নিয়ে উদ্বিগ্ন)–I am very anxious about your studies.

appear before sb (কারো সামনে উপস্থিত হওয়া)–He appeared before the committee.

arrive at/in swh (পৌঁছানো)–When did you arrive in England?

ashamed of sth/sb (কোনো কিছু নিয়ে লজ্জিত)–He was ashamed of the news.

ask for sth (চাওয়া)– Can I ask for a favour?

attempt to sb/ sb's life to do sth (কোনো কিছু করার চেষ্টা করা)–Men attempt to escape death.

attend to sb/sth (কোনো কিছু/ ব্যক্তির যত্ন নেয়া বা মনোযোগ দেয়া)–A nurse attends to her patients.

attraction for sb to sth (কোনো কিছুর জন্য আকর্ষণ)–I have no attraction to smoking.

available in (প্রাপ্তব্য)–All the best is available in English.

aware of sth (কোনো কিছু সম্বন্ধে সচেতন)–He is aware of his duties.

belong to (কারো অধিকারে থাকা)–This palace belongs to the orphanage.

beneficial to sth/sb (উপকারী)–It is not beneficial to health.

Bestow sth on/upon sb (কাউকে প্রদান করা)–Almighty has bestowed many things on us.

blessed with sth/sb (কোনো কিছুর দ্বারা আশীর্বাদপুষ্ট)–She blessed me with motherly affection.

bring about sth (কোনো কিছু ঘটানো)–Evil deeds bring about ruin.

build up sth (নির্মাণ করা)–Education will build up their character.

busy with sth/sb (কোনো কিছু নিয়ে ব্যস্ত)–He is always busy with his work.

care about sth/sb (কোনো ব্যক্তি/বস্তুকে গুর" ত্ব দেয়া)–But I don't care about money.

come round (সুস্থ হওয়া)–He will come round soon.

communicate with sb (কারো সাথে যোগাযোগ রাখা)–We should learn English to communicate with others.

compensate for sth (ক্ষতিপ– রণ দেয়া)–We will compensate for the loss.

competent for doing sth (কোনো কিছুতে যোগ্য)–You are competent for the post.

concentrate on sth (কোনো কিছুতে মনোযোগ দেয়া)–I just try to concentrate on the job.

congenial to sth/sb (কোনো কিছুর অনুক– লে)–Fresh air is congenial to our health.

congratulate sb on sth (কাউকে কোনো ক্ষেত্রে সফলতার জন্য অভিবাদন)–I congratulate you on your success.

conscious of sth (কোনো কিছুর সম• র্কে সচেতন)–He was conscious of his duties.

consist in sth (কোনো কিছুর মধ্যে বিদ্যমান থাকা)–Happiness consists in contentment.

consist of sth (কোনো কিছুর সমন্বয়ে গঠিত)–Our family consists of five members.

content with sth (কোনো কিছু নিয়ে তৃপ্ত)–Some are content with what they have.

contribute sth to/towards sth (কোনো কিছুতে অবদান রাখা)–His contribution to Bengali literature is praiseworthy.

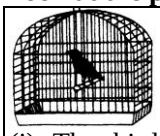
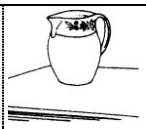
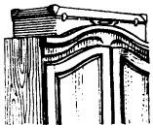
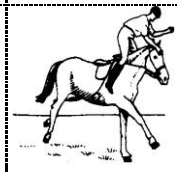
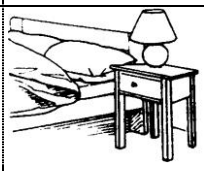
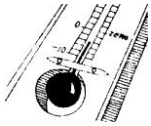
covered with sth (আবৃত)–About 72 percent of the surface is covered with water.

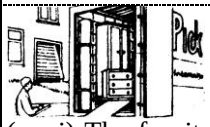
deal in sth (কোনো কিছুর ব্যবসা করা)–He deals in books.
deal with sth/sb (কোনো কিছু আলোচনা করা/সমাধান করা)–You should deal with your problem.
depend/ dependent on sb/ sth (But independent of) (কোনো কিছু/ ব্যক্তির উপর নির্ভর করা)–The future of a country depends on the students.
desire for sth (কোনো কিছুর জন্য আকাগুক্ষা)–Everyone has desire for wealth.
*[**Note :** desire যখন verb হিসেবে ব্যবহৃত হয় তখন এরপর preposition বসে না। Everyone desires x wealth.]*
detrimental to sth (কোনো কিছুর জন্য ক্ষতিকর)–Smoking is detrimental to health.
devoted to sth/ sb (কোনো কিছু/ ব্যক্তির প্রতি একান্তভাবে নিয়োজিত)–Zilani was devoted to his mother.
die of/die from/die for (কোনো রোগে মরা/ কোনো কারণে মরা/ আত্মত্যাগ করা)–He died of cholera. Two or three frogs died from stones thrown by the boys.
divide among/ between people (কারো মধ্যে ভাগ করে দেয়া)–Divide the mangoes among the boys.
divide sth into parts (কোনো কিছুকে অংশে ভাগ করা)–Greece was divided into many cities.
end in sth (ভাল মন্দ কোনো পরিণতি লাভ করা)–My effort did not end in smoke.
escape from sth (কোনো কিছু থেকে মুক্তি)–Man has no escape from death.
essential to/ for sb for occurring sth (কারো কাছে কোনো কিছুর জন্য প্রয়োজন)–Holidays are essential to/ for our life.
excel in (কোনো কাজে শ্রেষ্ঠ হওয়া)– He excels in bowling.
enter/ place –enter এর পর place থাকলে preposition বসে না। He entered the room.
faith in sth/ sb (কোনো কিছুতে কাহারও উপর বিশ্বাস থাকা)–Everyone must have faith in Allah.
familiar with sth (কোনো কিছুর সাথে পরিচিত)–I am familiar with the job.
fill sb with sth (কোনো কিছু দিয়ে প– র্ণ করা)–The cities are filled with fume and smoke.
fond of sth (কোনো কিছুর অনুরাগী)–A good student is fond of books.
full of sth (কোনো কিছু দিয়ে প– র্ণ)–The world is full of different things.
full to the brim (কানায় কানায় প– র্ণ)–The river is full to the brim
get rid of sth (কোনো কিছু থেকে মুক্তি পাওয়া)–They help us to get rid of the din and bustle of life.
give up sth/ sb (কোনো কিছু ত্যাগ করা)–It is high time we gave up the habit of covetousness.
go through (পড়া)–You should go through English newspapers, story books etc.
good at sth (কোনো কিছুতে দক্ষ)–Hasan is good at English.
greed for (কোনো কিছুর জন্য লোভ)–One shouldn't have greed for excessive money .
guilty of (দোষী)–The man is guilty of theft.
hanker after/for sth (কোনো কিছুর জন্য লালায়িত হওয়া)–Some people hanker after riches.
harmful to sth (কোনো কিছুর/ কারো জন্য ক্ষতিকর)–It is harmful to our health.
hinder sb/sth from sth/doing sth (কোনো কিছু করতে কাউকে বিঘ্নিত করা)–It hindered him from going abroad.
hindrance to sb/sth (কারো কাছে বা কোনো কিছুতে অন্তরায়)–Poverty is a hindrance to success.
hit upon/on sth (হঠাৎ মনে কোনো কিছু উদয় হওয়া)–He hit upon a plan to set up peace in the country.
hostile to sb (বিরোধী)–The Pak armies were hostile to the freedom fighters.
in a fix about (কোনো কিছু নিয়ে বিব্রত)–I am in a fix about this matter.
in order of (sth) (কোনো কিছু অনুসারে)–You have stood first in order of merit**.**
in spite of (সত্ত্বেও)– In spite of being poor, the village people are still very hospitable.
indifferent to (উদাসীন)–A good student is never indifferent to his studies.
indulge in (গা ভাসিয়ে দেয়া)–Many boys are seen indulged in evil deeds.
inform sb of sth (কাউকে কোনো কিছু অবহিত করা)–He informed me of the incident.
injured in (accident) (কোনো কিছুতে আহত)–At least 10 people were injured in the accident.
injured by (কারো দ্বারা আহত)–A man was injured by a criminal.
injurious to sth (কোনো কিছুর জন্য ক্ষতিকর)–Smoking is injurious to health.
insisted on sth/doing sth (জোর দিয়ে বলা বা পীড়াপীড়ি করা)–You insisted on my early return.
interested in sth/sb (কোনো কিছুতে অনুরক্ত বা আগ্রহী)–Our people are interested in our own culture.
keen on (কৌতূহলী)–I am keen on learning English.
key to sth (কোনো কিছু সমাধানের সহায়ক)–Industry is the key to success.
kind to sb (কারো প্রতি দয়া করা)–He is always kind to me.
knocking at (সন্নিকটে)– HSC Exam is knocking at the door.
take leave of sb (ত্যাগ করা)–Cordellia took leave of her sisters.
listen to sth (কোনো কিছু শোনা)–You can listen to BBC and CNN.
look after sb/ sth (দেখাশোনা করা)–She should look after her husband's welfare.
look for sb/ sth (কোনো কিছু খোঁজা)–I am looking for a good teacher.
name sb/ sth after sb/ sth (কোনো ব্যক্তি/ কোনো কিছুর নামে কোনো ব্যক্তি/কোনো কিছুর নাম রাখা)–Eiffel Tower was named after Gustave Eiffel.
necessary for sb/sth to do sth (কারো জন্য অপরিহার্য)–They are necessary for our existence.
on the bank of sth (কোনো কিছুর তীরে)–My village is on the bank of the Padma.
owe sth to sb (করো কাছে ঋণী)–I owe to my parents.
pleasure in/of sth/ doing sth (কোনো কিছুতে সন্তুষ্টি)–You will find pleasure in swimming.
preside over (সভাপতিত্ব করা) The Headmistress presided over the function
prevail in sth (বিরাজ করা)–Dowry prevails in Bangladesh.
proud of sb/sth (গর্বিত)–Kabir is very proud of his talent.
Proficient in (দক্ষ) –He is proficient in English.

put on sth (পরিধান করা)–Put on warm clothes.
put up with (সহ্য করা)–I will not put up with this.
reason for (কারণ)–Show me reason for your absence.
refrain from doing sth (কোনো কিছু করতে বাধা দেয়া)–We refrain them from putting up barricade.
relief of/ from sth (কোনো কিছু থেকে মুক্ত)–They give us relief from heavy pressure.
rely on sth/sb (নির্ভর করা)–Success must rely on hard work.
remedy for sth/against (problem) (কোনো কিছুর প্রতিকার)–There is no remedy for cancer.
run after sth/sb (কোনো কিছুর পিছু নেয়া)–We should not run after money.
run sb/sth over (যানবাহন যখন কোনো ব্যক্তি/বস্তুকে চাপা দেয়)–A student was run over by a car.
satisfied with sb/sth (কারো প্রতি সন্তুষ্ট)–Man is not satisfied with what he has seen.
save from sth (রক্ষা করা)–We should try to save this art from ruination.
skim through (ভাসা ভাসা পড়া)–I skim through the newspapers.
stand for sth (অর্থ হওয়া)–SP stands for Superintendent of Police.
struggle against (কোনো কিছু/ কারো বির" দ্ধে সংগ্রাম করা)–Kazi Nazrul Islam struggled against deprivation.
succumb to sth (পরাজিত হওয়া)–They succumbed to injuries.
suffer from sth (problem) (কোনো কিছু থেকে ভোগা/ কষ্ট পাওয়া)–He suffers from inner conflict.
take care of sb/sth (কারো/কোনো কিছুর যত্ন নেওয়া) She takes care of her father.
take part in sth (কোনো কিছুতে অংশগ্রহণ করা) He took part in the competition.
take pride in sth (কোনো কিছু বা কারো জন্য গর্ববোধ করা)–Nobody should take pride in his profession.
thankful to sb for sth (কোনো কিছুর জন্য কারো প্রতি কৃতজ্ঞ)–He was thankful to Allah for his riches.
thirst for (কোনো কিছুর জন্য তৃষ্ণা) Man has thirst for knowledge.
tired of sth (কোনো কিছু নিয়ে বিরক্ত)– The politicians are not tired of flattery.
tolerant of sth (সহনশীল)–They are not tolerant of any criticism.
true to one's word/ promise (কথা/ প্রতিশ্রুতি রাখা)–An honest man is true to his word.
useful to sb for sth/doing sth (উপকারী)–Many animals are very useful to man.
vary from (আলাদা হওয়া)–It varies from man to man.
victim to (কোনো কিছুর শিকার)–He does not fall a victim to any greed.
worthy of sth (কোনো কিছুর যোগ্য/ দাবীদার)–He was really worthy of praise.

Practice

A. Look at the picture and fill in the blanks with appropriate preposition.

 (i) The bird is — the cage.	 (ii) She's jumping — the water.	 (iii) He's getting — the car.	 (iv) They're waiting — the bank.	 (v) The jug is — the table.
 (vi) The case is — the wardrobe.	 (vii) She's putting her luggage— the trolley	 (viii) He's falling — the horse	 (ix) She's — the bus stop.	 (x) The table is — the bed.
 (xi) She's sitting — Joe.	 (xii) The coach is going — London.	 (xiii) The letter is — Chicago.	 (xiv) He's walking — the sun.	 (xv) There's a bridge ___ the river.
 (xvi) He's — the car.	 (xvii) The plane is — the clouds.	 (xviii) The temperature is — zero.	 (xix) The cyclist is — the bus.	 (xx) The cyclist is — the tractor.

 (xxi) He's going — the stairs.	 (xxii) He's coming — the stairs.	 (xxiii) She's running — the road.	 (xxiv) The cars are going — the tunnel.	 (xxv) He's walking — the street.
 (xxvi) The house is — the trees.	 (xxvii) She's sitting — Joe.	 (xxviii) They're running — the track.	 (xxix) She's getting — the taxi.	 (xxx) He's going — the ladder.
 (xxxi) The furniture is — the van	 (xxxii) Someone is coming — the corridor.	 (xxxiii) There's garage — the house.	 (xxxiv) There's a statue — the museum.	 (xxxv) They're walking — the stadium.
 (xxxvi) The dog is — the mat	 (xxxvii) He's — the table.	 (xxxviii) She's — the car.	 (xxxix) He's — the roof.	 (xl) She's — the dance.

B. Fill in the gaps using simple prepositions from the list given in the box.

01.

at	of	in	to

A tourist has come (a) — Bangladesh from India. He is interested (b) — having an accommodation at a hotel. He wants (c) — have a spacious room. He wants to stay relaxingly (d) — the hotel for about a week. He has come here for doing a piece (e) — business and visiting Bangladesh too.

02.

among	upon	after	with	into

The Olympic Games were named (a) — the town of Olympia in Greece. In those days, Greece was divided (b) — many cities. They used to fight (c) — themselves. A man named Iphitos was concerned (d) — such wasteful strife. He hit (e) — a plan to set up peace in the country. His plan worked well.

03.

from	for	to	in	to

An honest man is true (a) — his word. He does not deviate (b) — the path of honesty. He knows that true peace consists (c) — honesty. So he does not fall a victim (d) — any greed. He has no ambition (e) — worldly things.

04.

for	in	to	with	by

A pious man is absorbed (a) — meditation. He has firm faith in Allah. He abides (b) — the rules of religion. He clings (c) — his faith. He knows that man is accountable to Allah (d) — his action. So, he leads his life according to religion. He is not angry (e) — anybody.

05.

into	in	to	with	in	for

Mr Kamal was very popular (a) — his students. The students had easy access (b) — his room. Whenever the students entered (c) — his room, they found him absorbed in study. He was proficient (d) — English. Yet he tried to excel himself (e) — his profession as a teacher.

C. Fill in the blanks of the following text with preposition given in the box below.

01.

to	in	of	by
in	for	with	to

A pious man is absorbed (a) — meditation. He has firm faith (b) — Allah. He abides (c) — the rules (d) — religion. He clings (e) — his faith. He knows that man is accountable to Allah (f) — his action. So he leads his life according (g) — religion. He is not angry (h) — anybody.

02.

without	to	of	of/in
through	without	like	before

Most (a) — the students (b) — our country wish (c) — have a good result only skimming (d) — the books (e) — examinations. They feel (f) — getting success (g) — much labour. But, it is impossible. We should remember there is no gain (h) — pain.

03.

holycrossrajshahi.com

to	of	in	of
of	from	of	to

Mr Rahman is the director (a) — a project. He is an honest officer. He believes (b) — sincerity and punctuality. Taking bribe is foreign (c) — his nature. Some (d) — his colleagues are very jealous (e) — him. But nothing can daunt him. He always sticks (f) — his principles. He never deviates (g) — his principles. So, such an officer is worthy (h) — praise.

04.

on	to	in	of
by	of	to	of

A village market is a place where villagers go (a) — buy and sell various things. It usually sits (b) —the bank (c) — a river or a canal or (d) — the side (e) — highways. In the village market the villagers buy and sell different kinds (f) — foodgrains, all kinds of daily necessaries and other commodities. It is, (g) — fact, a primary centre (h) — meet people's need.

05.

to	of	for	in
without	in	of	to

Everyone should have a future plan (a) — his life. An aimless life is like a boat (b) — a rudder. I am a student (c) — class six. I want (d) — be a doctor that is my aim (e) — life. I have chosen it because I want (f) — serve the people. Medical facilities (g) — our people are very limited (h) — our country.

06.

after	between	for	of
by	of	against	from

The affinity (a) — honesty and dishonesty is quite impossible. A dishonest man is always greedy (b) — undue privileges. He hankers (c) — illegal income. He sells his honesty (d) — money. But an honest man is dead (e) — corruption. No problem, no threat can derail him (f) — the path (g) — honesty. That's why he is liked (h) — everybody.

07.

to	in	to	in
with	with	in	to

Mr. Jamal is an English teacher. He is an M.A (a) — English. He serves (b) — an ideal institution. He tries (c) — lead an honest life. He is the most favourite teacher (d) — the students. He speaks English like the English. (e) — speak the truth, he is friendly (f) — the students. He is satisfied (g) — what he earns (h) — a legal way. We want teacher like him.

08.

in	for	from	to
in	to	in	by

A good student is never indifferent (a) — his study. He knows well that success lies (b) — hard work. So he is always absorbed (c) — deep studies. Nothing can prevent him (d) — working hard. His hard work and sincerity result (e) — ultimate success. Everyone admires him (f) — his success. He is favourite (g) — his friends and family. He is liked (h) — everyone.

09.

of	up	to	from
of	from	of	to

All know that smoking is injurious (a) — health. But those who smoke do not abstain (b) — smoking. They are not careful (c) — their health. They suffer (d) — many fatal diseases. It is hoped that smokers should give (e) — smoking. Finally they succumb (f) — many diseases. So, we should make people aware (g) — the harmful effect (h) — smoking.

10.

down	for	on	from
after	round	to	about

Rabi : Good morning, sir. Can you spare a few minutes (a) — me?
Doctor : Sure! Come and sit (b) —. What's the matter with you?
Rabi : I've been suffering (c) — fever for a week.
Doctor : Do you have headache?
Rabi : Oh, yes.
Doctor : Lie (d) — the bed and let me examine you.
Rabi : Oh, sure.
Doctor : Don't worry (e) — your fever. It's nothing serious. It seems (f) — be viral fever. I'm prescribing some medicine and hope that you will come (g) — soon.
Rabi : Thank you very much.
Doctor : Meet me (h) — a week. Thanks.

Answers

A.

(i) inside (ii) into (iii) out of (iv) in (v) on (vi) on (vii) on (viii) off (ix) at (x) beside (xi) beside/ with (xii) to (xiii) from (xiv) against (xv) over (xvi) under (xvii) above (xviii) at (xix) in front of (xx) behind (xxi) up (xxii) down (xxiii) along (xxiv) through (xxv) along (xxvi) under (xxvii) in front of (xxviii) along (xxix) out of (xxx) up (xxxi) inside (xxxii) along (xxxiii) beside (xxxiv) in front of (xxxv) beside (xxxvi) on (xxxvii) on (xxxviii) inside (xxxix) on (xl) in

B.

01. (a) to (b) in (c) to (d) at (e) of
02. (a) after (b) into (c) among (d) with (e) upon
03. (a) to (b) from (c) in (d) to (e) for
04. (a) in (b) by (c) to (d) for (e) with
05. (a) with (b) to (c) into (d) in (e) in

C.

01. (a) in (b) in (c) by (d) of (e) to (f) for (g) to (h) with
02. (a) of (b) of/in (c) to (d) through (e) before (f) like (g) without (h) without
03. (a) of (b) in (c) to (d) of (e) of (f) to (g) from (h)

of
04. (a) to (b) on (c) of (d) by (e) of (f) of (g) in (h) to
05. (a) of (b) without (c) of (d) to (e) in (f) to (g) for (h) in
06. (a) between (b) of (c) after (d) for (e) against (f) from (g) of (h) by
07. (a) in (b) in (c) to (d) to (e) To (f) with (g) with (h) in
08. (a) to (b) in (c) in (d) from (e) in (f) for (g) to (h) by
09. (a) to (b) from (c) of (d) from (e) up (f) to (g) of (h) of
10. (a) for (b) down (c) from (d) on (e) about (f) to (g) round (h) after

Conjunctions 13

The woodcutter looked at the gold axe. He looked at the silver axe. He looked at the iron axe. He chose the iron axe. He was an honest man. The fairy gave him all the axes.

উপরের ছোট অনু" ছদটি পড়ে আমরা কিছু সমস্যা বোধ করি:

১. বাক্যগুলো পারস• রিকভাবে সম• র্কযুক্ত নয়।
২. কিছু শব্দ বারবার ব্যবহার করা হয়েছে।
৩. ফলে অনু" ছদটি শ্র" তিমধুর হয়নি।

কিন্তু আমরা যদি বাক্যগুলিকে যুক্ত করে লেখি তবে তা আরও শ্র" তিমধুর ও বোধগম্য হবে। লক্ষ কর :

The woodcutter looked at the gold axe, the silver axe and the iron axe but he chose the iron axe because he was an honest man; and so the fairy gave him all the axes.

উপরে দেখা যা" ছ and, but, because, so এই শব্দগুলো দ্বারা বাক্যগুলোকে পারস• রিকভাবে সম• র্কযুক্ত করা হয়েছে। এভাবে, যে word দুই বা ততোধিক word, phrase বা clause কে সংযুক্ত করে তাদের মধ্যে সম• র্ক স্থাপন করে, তাকে Conjunction বলে।

Conjunction যখন দুটি শব্দকে যুক্ত করে তখন তা অবশ্যই একই Parts of Speech হবে। লক্ষ কর :

He studied hard and passed the exam.
clause conj clause

Read or fail.
verb conj verb

The man is poor but honest.
adjective conj adjective

Kinds of Conjunctions

Conjunction প্রধানত দুই প্রকার। যথা :
(i) Co-ordinating (ii) Sub-ordinating

Co-ordinating Conjunction :
যে Conjunction সমপর্যায়ের দুই বা ততোধিক word, phrase বা clause কে সংযুক্ত করে, তাকে Co-ordinating conjunction বলে।
Co-ordinating Conjunction কে চার ভাগে ভাগ করা যায়।

(i) Copulative Conjunction (সংযোজক) :
দুই বা ততোধিক সমশ্রেণিভূক্ত তথ্যকে যুক্ত করে **উভয়টাকে** বুঝানোর জন্য যে Conjunction ব্যবহার করা হয়, তাকে Copulative Conjunction বলে। যেমন :

☑ **and (এবং) :**
and দিয়ে দুটি একই শ্রেণির parts of speech যুক্ত করা যায়। এটা বাক্যের subject বা object বা adverbial যে কোনো অংশে বসতে পারে। তবে মনে রাখবে, and দিয়ে যুক্ত অংশটি subject হলে তাকে সাধারণত plural ধরতে হয়।

Rahim and Karim are coming today.
I like fish and meat.
I went to Chittagong and Sylhet.
and দিয়ে দুটি বাক্যাংশকেও যুক্ত করা যায়। এক্ষেত্রে সাধারণত ১ম কাজটির ফলে কী ঘটল তা উল্লেখ করা হয়।
The rain stopped and the sun began shining brightly.

☑ **as well as (এবং) :**
as well as দিয়ে দুটি subject যুক্ত হলে প্রথম subject অনুযায়ী verb-টি বসে।
He as well as his brothers is present in the meeting.

☑ **both .....and (উভয়টা) :**
Both ----and দিয়ে যুক্ত অংশটি subject হলে তাকে সাধারণত plural ধরতে হয়।
Both Sumon and Shohag have passed the examination.

☑ **not only ..... but also (□ধু এটা নয় □□□ওটাও):**
not only ..... but also দিয়ে যুক্ত অংশটি subject হলে দ্বিতীয় subject part অনুযায়ী verb-টি বসে।
Not only Maidul but also Muhtadi has passed the examimation.

(ii) Alternative (বিক□বাচক) Conjunction :
হয় এটা না হয় ওটা বা কোনোটাই নয় এমন বুঝানোর জন্য যে Conjunction দুইটি বক্তব্যকে যুক্ত করে তাকে Alternative Conjunction বলে। যেমন :

☑ **either ..... or (হয় এটা □□□না হয় ওটা):** দুটির মধ্যে কোনো একটা বুঝাতে either .....or ব্যবহার করা হয়।
Either Rahim or I will come.

☑ **neither ..... nor (এটাও না □□□ওটাও না):** দুটির মধ্যে কোনোটি না বুঝাতে neither ..... nor ব্যবহার করা হয়।
Neither Maidul nor Muhit has passad the exam.

☑ **or (অথবা) :**
প্রথমটি না হলে পরেরটি এমন বুঝাতে or ব্যবহার করা হয়।
He has lost his purse, or it has been stolen.
আবার, উল্লেখিত কাজটির বিপরীত হলে তার ফলাফল কী হতে পারে বা হবে তা বুঝাতেও or ব্যবহার করা হয়।
Read or you will fail in the exam.

মনে রাখবে either ..... or, neither ..... nor, or দিয়ে দুটি subject যুক্ত হলে ২য় Subject অনুসারে Verb বসে।

☑ **otherwise (নতুবা) :**
উল্লেখিত কাজটির বিপরীত হলে তার ফলাফল কী হতে পারে বা হবে তা বুঝাতে otherwise ব্যবহার করা হয়।

holycrossrajshahi.com

Do the work; otherwise you will suffer.

(iii) Adversative (বৈপরীত্যসূচক) Conjunction :

দুইটি বিপরীত বক্তব্যকে যুক্ত করতে যে Conjunction ব্যবহৃত হয় তাকে Adversative Conjunction বলে। যেমন :

☑ but (কিন্তু), yet (তবুও), still (তথাপি), nevertheless (তদসত্ত্বেও) :

প্রথম কাজটির যৌক্তিক যে ফল হবার কথা তা না হয়ে বিপরীত কোনো ফল হলে এই Conjunction ব্যবহার করা হয়।

He is rich but unhappy.

He did not study hard nevertheless he passed the examination.

☑ on the contrary (পক্ষান্তরে), while (পক্ষান্তরে), whereas (পক্ষান্তরে) :

দুটি পার্থক্যমূলক বক্তব্যকে যুক্ত করার জন্য এই Conjunction ব্যবহার করা হয়।

I am poor while he is honest.

The ant was industrious; while the grasshopper was lazy.

(iv) Illative (সিদ্ধান্তবাচক) Conjunction :

যে Conjunction কোনো কার্য কারণ সম্পর্ক বুঝাতে ব্যবহৃত হয় তাকে Illative Conjunction বলে।

☑ therefore (তাই), consequently (ফলে), as a result (ফলে):

কোনো কাজের যৌক্তিক ফলাফলের সাথে এই Conjunction ব্যবহার করা হয়।

He has starved for two days; therefore/ as a result/ consequently he has become weak.

2 Subordinating Conjunction :

যে Conjunction এক বা একাধিক Subordinate (অধীন) Clause কে Principal বা main clause বা Independent (স্বাধীন) clause এর সাথে সংযুক্ত করে তাকে Subordinate Conjunction বলে। যেমন :

We study hard so that we can pass the examination.

Doyeta had reached the station before Sumon came.

We eat so that we may live.

We went early lest we should miss the train.

Subordinating conjunction সাধারণত নিম্নলিখিত অর্থ প্রদান করে :

(a) Time (সময়) :

সময় নির্দেশক conjunction গুলো হলো till (যতক্ষণ পর্যন্ত), until (যতক্ষণ না পর্যন্ত), before (আগে), after (পরে),when (যখন), while (যখন), since (থেকে)।

Wait until I return.

Wait till I return.

I have not seen him since he was four.

Do not give her this pill (বড়ি) till the doctor comes.

(b) Cause or Reason (কারণ) :

Cause or reason (কারণ) অর্থ প্রকাশক conjunction গুলো হলো : because (কারণ), as (যেহেতু), since (যেহেতু)। কারণ প্রকাশক ও ফলাফল প্রকাশক দুটি বাক্যকে যুক্ত করতে এই conjunction ব্যবহার করা হয়। মনে রাখবে, কারণ প্রকাশক অংশের শুরুতে এই conjunction যুক্ত করতে হবে। যেমন :

You will not pass because you have not tried.

I could not attend the class as I was ill.

মনে রাখবে, conjunction-যুক্ত অংশ প্রথমে বা পরে লেখা যায়। তবে প্রথমে লিখলে দুই বাক্যাংশের মাঝে কমা বসবে।

As I was ill, I could not attend the class.

(c) Purpose (উদ্দেশ্য) :

উদ্দেশ্য প্রকাশক Conjunction গুলো হলো that (যেন, যাতে), so that (যাতে, যেন), in order that (এই উদ্দেশ্য যে), lest (যাতে না)। প্রথম কাজটির উদ্দেশ্য প্রকাশ করতে এই Conjunction যোগে উদ্দেশ্যমূলক অংশ লিখতে হয়।

Walk fast lest you should miss the train.

Eat good food so that you may keep your health fit.

Read attentively that you can pass the exam.

☑ lest এর ক্ষেত্রে verb-এর পূর্বে should ব্যবহার করতে হবে এবং negative word ব্যবহার করা যাবে না; কারণ এটা অর্থগতভাবে নিজেই negative।

☑ so that, in order that এর ক্ষেত্রে verb-এর পূর্বে can/ could/ may/ might ব্যবহার করতে হবে।

(d) Condition (শর্ত) :

শর্ত প্রকাশক Conjunction গুলো হলো if (যদি), unless (যদি না), whether or not (হল কিনা), provided, providing that (যদি, এই শর্ত সাপেক্ষ)। শর্ত ও ফলাফল প্রকাশক দুটি বাক্যাংশকে যুক্ত করার জন্য এই Conjunction গুলো ব্যবহার করা হয়। এই Conjunction শর্ত প্রকাশক অংশের শুরুতে লিখতে হবে।

If you read, you will pass.

If you do not read, you will fail.

(e) Effect (ফলাফল) :

এই ধরনের conjunction হলো so/such ..... that (এত----যে). কোনো একটি অবস্থার বা কাজের পরবর্তী ফলাফল যুক্ত করার জন্য এই conjunction ব্যবহার করা হয়। এক্ষেত্রে ১ম অংশের verb-এর পর so/such এবং ফলাফলের শুরুতে that যোগ করতে হয়।

যেমন : She is so lazy that she cannot prepare her lessons.

(f) Comparison (তুলনা) :

Comparison (তুলনা) অর্থ প্রকাশক subrodinating conjunction গুলো হলো : than (চেয়ে), So ..... as/ as ..... as (যত---তত/ মত)।

Doyeta is wiser than Jui.

Sumon is as tall as Anwar.

Jui is smaller than Aney.

Suvo is not as tall as Rubel.

(g) Manner (রীতি) :

Manner (রীতি) অর্থ প্রকাশক subordinating conjunction গুলো হলো : as ..... so (যেমন---তেমন) ; according as (যেমন), like (মত) as if/ as though (যেন)। কোনো একটি কাজ করার প্রক্রিয়া কেমন তা যুক্ত করতে এই conjunction ব্যবহার করা হয়। মনে রাখবে as if/ as though এরপর verb-টি Past/ Past Perfect হবে। কাজটি Present হলে as if/ as though এর অংশ past হবে; আর কাজটি Past হলে as if/ as though এর অংশ Past Perfect হবে।

As you sow, so you reap.

He will get according as he wants.

He talks as if he were mad.

It is raining like the sky is falling.

(h) Concession or Contrast (স্বীকৃতি বা তুলনা) :

Concession or Contrast (স্বীকৃতি বা তুলনা) এ ধরনের অর্থ প্রকাশকারী subordinating conjunction হলো : though/although (যদিও)। কোনো ঘটনা বা অবস্থার যৌক্তিক ফলাফল না হয়ে যদি বিপরীত ফলাফল হয় তবে এই conjunction ব্যবহার করা হয়। যে অংশ অবস্থা/কাজ প্রকাশক তার শুর" তে though/although ব্যবহার করতে হয়।

Though he worked hard, he failed.

Though he was late, he did not say sorry.

মনে রাখবে conjunction-যুক্ত অংশ আগে বা পরে লেখা যায়। তবে conjunction-যুক্ত অংশ আগে লিখলে মাঝে কমা দিতে হবে।

Though he is ill, he will come.

He will come though he is ill.

(i) Indroductory sense (সচনা) :

যখন কোনো conjunction sentence এর শুর" তে ব্যবহৃত হয়; অর্থাৎ that, there ইত্যাদি দ্বারা শুর" হয় তখন তাকে Introductory conjunction বলে। যেমন :

That he is a good man is known to all.

(j) Apposition (স□) :

সম্বন্ধ প্রকাশকারী subordinating conjunction হলো : that, who, whom, whose, what, which, where, when.

The rumour that his brother Abul has become smuggler, is false.

Correlative Conjunction :

প– র্বের আলোচনায় লক্ষ করা যায়, পরস্• র যুক্ত হওয়া বা সম্বন্ধযুক্ত হওয়া কিছু কিছু conjunction আছে, যাদের একটি word বা অংশ অন্য একটি word বা অংশের সাথে মিলে একসাথে একটি যৌগিক conjunction এ পরিণত হয় এবং একটি মাত্র conjunction হিসেবে কাজ করে। এদেরকে বলে correlative conjunction। এরা জোড়ায় জোড়ায় ব্যবহৃত হয়। যেমন :

hardly ..... when	no sooner ..... than
scarcely ..... when	neither ..... nor
though ..... yet	either ..... or
whether ..... or not	both ..... and
such ..... as	the same ..... as
the same ..... that	as ..... as

Practice

A Find out different conjunctions from the following sentences.

(i) Work or go away.
(ii) I had seen him before he saw me.
(iii) Arif and Sharif went there.
(iv) Do you know why he dislikes you?
(v) He is not only a good student but also a good artist.
(vi) If he invited me, I would go.
(vii) Faruk as well as his friends are very helpful.
(viii) Though they are tired, they are willing to go out now.
(ix) Nobody will love him unless he loves others.
(x) That the earth moves round the sun, is known to all.

B. Fill in the gaps using suitable conjunctions from the list given in the box.

01.

as	for	unless	because	until

(a) — you work hard, you will not reach your goal.
(b) Wait here — I come back.
(c) — I was weak, I could not walk on foot.
(d) Nobody knows him well — he is a stranger in our village.
(e) Eva could not attend the party — she was suffering from fever.

02.

though	or	but	as if	unless

(a) I would fail — you helped me.
(b) She talks — she were mad.
(c) Work hard — you will fail.
(d) — he is poor, he is honest.
(e) He tried hard — did not succeed.

03.

until	since	if	unless	lest

(a) — you work hard, you will fail.
(b) Wait — I come back.
(c) Walk fast — you should miss the train.
(d) I shall go — I am invited.
(e) It is a long time — we last saw him.

04.

since	because	if	or	after

(a) I hate him — he is lazy.
(b) Walk quickly — you will miss the train.
(c) Many years have passed — his father died.
(d) — you come, I shall go.
(e) The patient died — the doctor had come.

05.

and	still	because	if	otherwise	and

(a) Two — two makes four.
(b) I was annoyed — I kept quiet.
(c) Walk quickly — you will not overtake him.
(d) God made the country — man made the town.
(e) I read the paper — it interests me.

06.

who	so that	while	because
or	though	that	and

While taking food, we should bear in mind (a) — we do not eat just to satisfy hunger (b) — to fill the belly. We eat (c) — we can preserve our health. Some people who live in the midst of plenty, do not eat the food they need for good health (d) — they have no knowledge of the science of health (e) — nutrition.

07.

but	or	if	and	which	and	although

Every citizen has some duties (a) — responsibilities for his country and nation (b) — most of the people are indifferent to these. We have achieved our freedom (c) — national identity at the cost of a tremendous sacrifice (d) — is still evaluated nationally. However, some unpatriotic people seem to be forgetful of our national history. So, we all should render selfless service for the society. (e) — we do otherwise; we will be hated by our future generations.

08.

because	if	so that	when
or	and	but	although

Man is the architect of his own fortune. (a) — he makes a proper division of his time (b) — does his duties accordingly, he is sure to prosper in life. (c) — if he does otherwise, he is sure to repent (d) — it is too late. To kill time is similar to commit suicide. We need to be punctual (e) — we could be successful.

09.

so that	or	if	so
but	when	that	although

Most of our students cannot write their examination paper fairly well. They cannot understand the questions properly, (a) — they often beat about the bush and cram their answer with irrelevant and unnecessary details. (b) — their teachers suggest (c) — their answers should be brief and precise, they often lengthen these unnecessarily. Every student should understand the questions well and answer them to the point (d) — they can get expected marks. Don't worry (e) — your answers are fairly short.

10.

and	but	though	or
if	as well as	unless	because

Illiteracy is a curse. It is the root cause of ignorance which frustrates all development efforts of the government (a) — the community. No development effort can succeed (b) — illiteracy can be removed. Eradication of illiteracy in a country like Bangladesh with so vast a population is undoubtedly a mammoth task. Any individual community (c) — organization even the government is not capable of solving this tremendous problem single-handed. It is the social responsibility of all the educated people (d) — women to make some all out efforts to remove illiteracy from the society. (e) — the government of Bangladesh has already undertaken some effective steps, it is not sufficient.

11.

or	that	if	and
but	as well as	when	because

Men usually want to have their own way. No one, however, can have his own way all the time. He has to consider the interests of others (a) — his own interests. He is free to take his own decisions, (b) — these decisions must not be unjust (c) — harmful for others. For example, he must be very careful while driving (d) — there are other vehicles (e) — pedestrians on the road.

12.

although	that	if	and
but	as well as	when	because

21st February is a red letter day in our national history. It is our pride (a) — no nation of the world has ever fought for its language the way we fought. So it has been now declared as International Mother Language Day. The proposal has been passed unanimously in the general assembly of UNESCO (b) — some countries pointed out (c) — the incident of 21st February is related to the Bangalees only. UNESCO gives recognition of the day as International Mother Language Day (d) — upholds the prestige of Bangalees all over the world. The people of Bangladesh (e) — the people of the whole world celebrate the day with due honour.

13.

although	so that	if	and
but	as well as	not only	because

Water is an important element of the environment. It is essential for living (a) — it is called life. But polluted water is harmful (b) — it causes dangerous diseases. Polluted water causes (c) — diseases but also death. (d) — polluted water is dangerous, illiterate people drink it. We should prevent water pollution (e) — we may get safe and sound environment.

14.

although	so that	if	and
but	as well as	not only	because

Population explosion is a threat. The growth of population in our country is so high that our land cannot bear. It creates many problems (a) — one of these problems is unemployment problem. (b) — many youth are getting educated, they are not getting jobs. They remain unemployed (c) — the position in the job fields is limited. (d) — we fail to control growth rate, our future will be more difficult than the present. So, we should try to control the growth rate (e) — we can live happily.

15.

because	that	if	and
but	as well as	not only	although

Politics itself is not an evil job (a) — the whole development of the country depends on it. In some cases student politics is not basically bad (b) — nowadays it has taken a dreadful shape. Generally the parents (c) — guardians opine (d) — students should not take part in politics. They forbid them to take part in politics (e) — it greatly hampers their study.

Answers

A.

(i) or (ii) before (iii) and (iv) why (v) not only....but also (vi) If (vii) as well as (viii) Though (ix) unless (x) That

B.

01. (a) Unless (b) until (c) As (d) becasue (e) because
02. (a) unless (b) as if (c) or (d) Though (e) but
03. (a) Unless (b) until (c) lest (d) if (e) since
04. (a) because (b) or (c) since (d) If (e) after

05. (a) and (b) still/ and (c) otherwise (d) and (e) because
06. (a) that (b) or (c) so that (d) because (e) and
07. (a) and (b) although (c) and (d) which (e) If
08. (a) If (b) and (c) But (d) when (e) so that
09. (a) so (b) Although (c) that (d) so that (e) if
10. (a) as well as (b) unless (c) or (d) and (e) Though
11. (a) as well as (b) but (c) or (d) because (e) and
12. (a) because (b) although (c) that (d) and (e) as well as
13. (a) and (b) because (c) not only (d) Although (e) so that
14. (a) and (b) Though (c) because (d) If (e) so that
15. (a) although (b) but (c) and (d) that (e) because

Interjections 14

যে সকল Word মনের আকস্মিক আনন্দ, বেদনা, বিস্ময়, ঘৃণা, উ'ছ্বাস ইত্যাদি প্রকাশ করে, তাদেরকে Interjection বলে। এদের পর সর্বদা Note of Exclamation অর্থাৎ আশ্চর্যবোধক চিহ্ন (!) বসে। নিচে কিছু Interjection এর ব্যবহার দেওয়া হলো :

• আনন্দ প্রকাশে	Hurrah!	Hurrah! I have got GPA-5.
• দুঃখ প্রকাশে	Alas! Ah!	Alas! He is undone.
• তিরস্কার প্রকাশে	Fie! Fie!	Fie! Fie! What a shame!
• উৎসাহ প্রদানে	Bravo!	Bravo! You've done well.
• ঘৃণা বা বিরক্তি প্রকাশে	Tut! Tut!	Tut! Tut! It is a nasty matter.
• সম্ভাষণ অর্থে	Hallo!	Hallo! How are you?
• মনোযোগ আকর্ষণ করতে	Hush! Hark!	Hush! The Headteacher is coming.
• সন্দেহ প্রকাশে	Hump!	Hump! I don't believe her.
• আনন্দ/ বিস্ময় প্রকাশে	Wao!	Wao! The scenery is charming.

☑ কখনো কখনো Interjectional word কে that দ্বারা যুক্ত করে একটি Sentence এ রূপান্ত্র করা যায়। যেমন–
Oh that I were a King!
Oh that I could be a bird!

☑ মাঝে মাঝে Interjection ছাড়াও অন্যান্য Parts of Speech মনের আকস্মিক অনুভূতি প্রকাশ করতে ব্যবহৃত হয়।
1. Noun : To suffer such a horrible suffering, he has been left alone!
2. Adjective : Marvellous! Wonderful!
3. Verb Subjunctive : Would that I could be a millionaire!
4. Adverb : What a charming scenery!
5. Conjunction : If I were a child again!
6. Verb Imperative : Look, here comes Kamal!

☑ Interjectional Phrase : কোনো Phrase যদি Interjection এর ন্যায় মনের আকস্মিক আবেগ প্রকাশ করে, তবে তাকে Interjectional Phrase বলে। যেমন–
For God's sake! Hold your tongue.
For God's sake! Never tell a lie.

Note : আধুনিক ইংরেজিতে Interjection কে Parts of Speech হিসেবে গণ্য করা হয় না। কারণ Sentence এর অপরাপর Word এর সাথে তাদের কোনো সম• র্ক থাকে না। এদেরকে Sentence থেকে আলাদা করে নিলে ম– ল Sentence এর অর্থের উপর কোনো প্রভাব পড়ে না। যেমন–
Bravo! You have done well.
এখানে, Bravo বাদ দিলে Sentence এর বাকী অংশ দাঁড়ায় : You have done well; যা পরিপ– র্ণ অর্থ প্রকাশ করে না।

Articles 15

A boy is flying a kite. The kite is nice. A girl is playing with a balloon. A man is drawing a picture. There is an owl in the tree.



উপরে পাশের ছবিটির একটা বর্ণনা দেয়া হয়েছে। বর্ণনাটিতে দেখা যা" ছ প্রতিটি Noun এর প– র্বে হয় a বা an বা the ব্যবহার করা হয়েছে।
এই A, an ও the কে article বলা হয়। Articles সাধারণত ২ প্রকার। যথা :

(i) Definite (নির্দি□তাবাচক) Article :
কোনো noun এর নির্দিষ্টতা প্রকাশের জন্য যে article ব্যবহার করা হয়, তাকে Definite Article বলে। Definite Article হিসাবে the ব্যবহৃত হয়। যেমন– the cow, the man, the Himalayas, the Pacific.

(ii) Indefinite Article (অনির্দি□তাবাচক) :
অনির্দিষ্টতা প্রকাশ করার জন্য যে article ব্যবহৃত হয়, তাকে Indefinite Article বলে। Indefinite Article হিসাবে a/an বসে। a man, an egg, a hunter, an eye, an hour, an heir, an honour, a herbal, an hotel, an MP, a hotel etc.

a/an এর পার্থক□
a ও an এর মধ্যে অর্থগত কোনো পার্থক্য নেই তবে ব্যবহারগত পার্থক্য রয়েছে।
Word টির শুর" তে উ" চারণে vowel sound থাকলে an বসে, কিন্তু consonant sound থাকলে a বসে।

an honest (অনিস্ট) man	a rich (রিচ) man
an orphan (ও°ফ্ন্) boy	a poor (পুআর) boy
an egg (এগ)	a cat (ক্যাট)
an hour (আউআর)	a book (বুক)
an hotel (ঔটল)	a hotel (হোটেল)
an MA (এমএ)	a BA (বিএই) certificate
an HSC (এইচএসসি) student	a CA (সিএই) student
an NGO (এনজিও) activist	a SAT (স্যাট) course

মনে রাখবে, 'ইউ' বা 'ওয়া' ইংরেজিতে consonant sound। তাই শব্দের শুর" তে উ" চারণ 'ইউ' বা 'ওয়া' থাকলে a বসবে।
a university (ইউনি)
a ewe (ইউ)
a European (ইউআরপিআন)

hour শব্দটির শুর" তে letter টি consonant থাকলেও উ" চারণের শুর" তে 'আ' এসেছে তাই an বসেছে। মনে রাখবে letter দেখে নয় বরং উ" চারণ অনুযায়ী a/an বসে। এভাবে hotel শব্দটির দুধরনের উ" চারণ বিধায় a/an বসতে পারে। a hotel (যখন 'হোটেল' উ" চারণ করা হবে।) an hotel (যখন 'ওটেল' উ" চারণ করা হবে।)

Repetition of Articles

দুই বা ততোধিক noun/adjective ভিন্ন ভিন্ন ব্যক্তি, প্রাণী বা বস্তুকে বুঝালে প্রতিটি noun/adjective এর প– র্বে article বসে। তবে একই ব্যক্তি, প্রাণী বা বস্তুকে বুঝালে শুধু প্রথম noun/adjective এর প– র্বে article বসে।

The Headmaster and the Secretary were present (দুইজন ব্যক্তি অর্থাৎ একজন Headmaster ও অন্যজন Secretary)

কিন্তু, The Headmaster and Secretary was present (একই ব্যক্তি যিনি Headmaster ও Secretary)

I have bought a red and a blue pencil. (দু'টি পেনসিল অর্থাৎ একটি red ও অন্যটি blue)

কিন্তু,I have bought a red and blue pencil. (লাল ও নীল রং মিশ্রিত একটি পেনসিল)

মনে রাখবে, verb-টি singular হলে একজন এবং verb-টি plural হলে একাধিক বুঝাবে।

Use of Articles

Articles এর basic নিয়ম :

Rule 1 : সামগ্রিক বুঝাতে Non-count Noun এর প– র্বে × বসবে।
× Water has no colour. × life is not a bed of roses. × Money begets × money.

Rule 2 : সামগ্রিক বুঝাতে Singular Noun এর প– র্বে a/ an/ the বসবে।
The cow lives on grass. The/An ant is industrious.

Rule 3 : সামগ্রিক বুঝাতে Plural Noun এর প– র্বে × বসবে।
× Tigers are ferocious. × cows live on grass.

Rule 4 : অনেকের মধ্যে কিছু বুঝাতে Non countable Noun এর প– র্বে × বসবে।
Now I need × water. I eat × rice in the morning.

Rule 5 : অনেকের মধ্যে কিছু বুঝাতে Plural Noun এর প– র্বে × বসবে।
The girl sells × flowers. We will need × volunteers tomorrow.

Rule 6 : অনেকের মধ্যে একটি/ একজন বুঝাতে a/ an বসবে।
Take an umbrella with you. I need a pen. A man came to me.


কীভাবে বুঝব " সামগ্রিক" **না** "অনেকের মধ্যে একটি বা কিছু"

Noun টির প– র্বে "সব স্থানের সকল" যোগ করলে যদি অর্থ পরিবর্তন না হয় তবে বুঝতে হবে এখানে "সামগ্রিক" বুঝানো হয়েছে। লক্ষ কর:

The cow lives on grass. (গর" ঘাস খেয়ে জীবন ধারণ করে।)—"All cows everywhere" live on grass (সব স্থানের সকল গর" ঘাস খেয়ে জীবন ধারণ করে।). এখানে দেখা যা" ছ "সব স্থানের সকল" যোগ করা হলেও অর্থগত কোনো সমস্যা হয়নি। তাই এটা "সমগ্রিক" বুঝিয়েছে।

আবার,

A cow gave birth to a calf last night. (একটি গর" গত রাতে একটি বাছুর প্রসব করেছে।) "All cows everywhere" gave birth to a child last night (সব স্থানের সকল গর" গত রাতে একটি বাছুর প্রসব করেছে।). এখানে দেখা যা" ছ "সব স্থানের সকল" যোগ করার কারণে অর্থগত সমস্যা হয়েছে। তাই এটা "সামগ্রিক" বুঝায়নি বরং "অনেকের মধ্যে একটি" বুঝিয়েছে।


বস্তুবাচক Noun এর ক্ষেত্রে "সামগ্রিক" বুঝানোর জন্য No Article + Plural Noun ব্যবহার করা উচিৎ।

Rule 7 : নির্দিষ্ট বুঝাতে Non-countable Noun এর প– র্বে the বসবে।
We work for the welfare of the people. The water in the glass is polluted.

Rule 8 : নির্দিষ্ট বুঝাতে Singular Noun এর প– র্বে the বসবে।
The sun rises in the east. The girl at the door is needy.

Rule 9 : নির্দিষ্ট বুঝাতে Plural Noun এর প– র্বে the বসবে।
The cars in the garage are luxurious. The books on the table are expensive.

Rule 10 : নির্দিষ্ট বুঝাতে Proper Noun এর প– র্বে × বসবে।
I live in × Dhaka.


কীভাবে বুঝব "নির্দিষ্ট"

☑ যার দ্বিতীয়টি নাই
a. The earth moves round the sun.
b. The future looks bright!
আমরা জানি পৃথিবী, চন্দ্র, স– র্য, বর্তমান, ভবিষ্যত, অতীত, বিশ্ব, প– র্ব, পশ্চিম ইত্যাদি এর দ্বিতীয়টি নেই।

☑ যখন বক্তা ও শ্রোতা বুঝতে পারে কাকে বোঝানো হয়েছে
a. The boss just asked about the report.
b. Meet me in the park after the show.

☑ স• ষ্টত দ্বিতীয়বার উল্লেখ করা (অনেকের মধ্যে একটির ক্ষেত্রে)
a. I found a good hand note on articles. The handout is available online.
b. Rahim met a friend on the road. The friend asked for money.

☑ ইঙ্গিত দিয়ে প্রথমবার উল্লেখ করা এবং তা দ্বিতীয়বার উল্লেখ করলে
a. Dr. Kabir performed a difficult surgery. The patient is safe. এখানে প্রথম বাক্যে "surgery" দ্বারা "The patient" কে ইঙ্গিত করা হয়েছে। তাই ২য় বার patient এর প– র্বে the বসেছে।

☑ ক্রমবাচক ও superlatives এর ক্ষেত্রে
a. He is the first girl in the class.
b. He is the best boy.

☑ সুনির্দিষ্টতা প্রকাশক (sole, only, principle, etc.)
a. The sole purpose of our organization is…
b. The only fact we need to consider is…

☑ অর্থ সীমাবদ্ধকারী (শব্দগু" ছ বা বাক্যাংশ বা কোনো Prepositional Phrase যা কোনো Noun এর পর বসে ঐ Noun এর অর্থকে সীমাবদ্ধ করে)

a. Study the chapter on articles for the test tomorrow.
b. Also study the notes (that) I gave you yesterday.
উপরের প্রথম বাক্যটিতে 'on articles' এই Prepositional Phrase দিয়ে chapter কে এবং দ্বিতীয় বাক্যটিতে 'I gave you yesterday' এই বাক্যাংশ দিয়ে notes কে সীমাবদ্ধ বা নির্দিষ্ট করা হয়েছে।
☑ সমষ্টির/ দলের অংশ নির্দেশক (Most of/ one of/ many of/ several of/ a few of
a. Most of the international students (দলের অংশকে বুঝিয়েছে)।
b. Most international students (পুরো দলকে বুঝিয়েছে)। এভাবে,
c. Several of the risk factors
d. Several risk factors
e. A few of the examples
f. A few examples
*** মানবজাতি বুঝালে কোনো article বসে না।**
× Man is mortal.

ব্যতিক্রম

1. Proper Noun কে যখন subject এর সাথে তুলনা করা হয় তখন ঐ Proper Noun এর প– র্বে a/an বসে।
I am an Aristotle. আমি অ্যারিস্টোটলের মত একজন।
তবে এর পর Prepositional Phrase থাকলে The বসে।
Nazrul is the Byron of Bangladesh.

2. Proper Noun যদি অতি পরিচিত/ বিখ্যাত হয় তবে The বসে। এটা হতে পারে বিখ্যাত অট্টালিকা, রাজনৈতিক দল, সম•্রদায়ের নাম, গ্রন্থের নাম।
The Taj Mahal is the symbol of love.

3. কোনো Proper Noun যদি সমষ্টি বুঝায় তবে তার প– র্বে the বসে।
The United Kingdom, The United States, The West Indies (island groups), The Himalayas (mountain groups), The UAE, The Punjab.

4. Rank বা post যখন একা বসবে থাকবে তখন The বসে।
The Headmaster praised me yesterday.

5. Singular Countable Noun মানবজাতি বুঝালে Cross (×) বসবে।
Man is mortal. A man came to her. (প্রথম বাক্যটিতে man দ্বারা মানবজাতিকে বুঝিয়েছে; কিন্তু পরের বাক্যটি কোনো একজন মানুষকে বুঝিয়েছে।

6. Singular Countable Noun যদি Abstract Idea (যা দেখা/ ছোঁয়া যায় না) প্রকাশ করে তবে The বসবে।
The mother/sister/girl in her rose.
The father/boy/brother in him was found.
The child in him rose.
We should control the beast in us.
এখানে The mother দ্বারা 'মা' না বুঝিয়ে 'মাতৃত্ব' বোঝানো হয়েছে। একইভাবে, The sister–বোনসুলভ, The girl–বালিকাসুলভ বৈশিষ্ট্য, The father–পিতৃত্ব, The boy–বালকসুলভ বৈশিষ্ট্য, The brother–ভ্রাতৃত্ব, The child–শিশুসুলভ আচরণ, The beast–পশুত্ব বোঝায় যা ধরা ছোঁয়া যায় না।

7. Noun এর জন্য article বসে। তাই অন্য কোন parts of speech (adjective/ adverb/ verb/ preposition) এর প– র্বে article বসে না।
Fima is × brilliant. She × goes to school × everyday. × She is a girl × of sincerity.
তবে Noun এর প– র্বে adverb, adjective থাকলে সর্বপ্রথম article বসবে; মাঝে বসবে না।
Rahim is a very rich man.
Rahim is very rich a man. (incorrect)
Rahim is very a rich man. (incorrect)

8. Adjective যখন Noun হিসেবে ব্যবহৃত হয় তখন তার প– র্বে The বসে। এক্ষেত্রে সাধারণত Adjective টি একা একা Verb এর আগে/পরে বা Preposition এর পরে থাকে।
The industrious shine in life. I like the yellow of the egg. I went into the deep of the forest.

9. Adjective যদি Proper Noun এর আগে বা পরে ব্যবহৃত হয় তবে ঐ adjective এর প– র্বে the বসবে।
Akbar the Great was an emperor of Delhi.

10. Adjective এর comparative form থাকলেও যদি তারপর of the two থাকে তবে ঐ adjective এর প– র্বে the বসবে।
Bina is the younger of the two girls.

11. যত/তত বুঝাতে ..... উভয় adjective এর প– র্বে the বসবে।
The higher we fly, the harder we fall. The more, the merrier.

12. Possessive এর আগে বা পরে Article বসে না।
It is × my × pen.
We love × our × country.

13. একটি মাত্র পর্বত, দ্বীপ ইত্যাদির প– র্বে Aricle বসে না।

14. ঋতুর প– র্বে The/x বসে।
I like x summer./ I like the summer.

15. বার, মাস, সাল, উৎসব ও ভাষার নামের প– র্বে সাধারণত Article বসে না।
He will come on × Friday.



Uncountable Nouns

যে Noun কে গণনা করা যায় না তাকে Uncountable Noun বলে। লক্ষ কর :
তরল পদার্থ (water, milk), বায়বীয় পদার্থ (air, smoke), প্রাকৃতিক ব্যাপার (darkness, heat), গোনা যায় না এমন ক্ষুদ্র ক্ষুদ্র কণাবিশিষ্ট পদার্থ (sand, dirt, flour, rice), পাঠ্য বিষয় (physics, chemistry), শুধু অনুভব করা যায় এমন ব্যাপার (love, sympathy), ব্যাধি (cholera, malaria), ভাষা (Bangla, English), খেলাধুলা (football, cricket) ইত্যাদির নাম।

Practice

- **Insert articles in the blanks where necessary. Put a cross (×) where no article is needed.**

01. Money is called (a) — fuel of life. Though money is (b) — must in our practical life, it cannot ensure all happiness. Happiness lies in (c) — contentment. Morality plays (d) — important role in this regard. We should follow (e) — path of morality. We should by all means build up (f) — corruption free nation.

02. A computer is (a) — ultra modern invention. It is (b) — electronic device for storing and analysing

holycrossrajshahi.com

(c) — information. It works on (d) — basis of commands given by (e) — operator. It is (f) — blessing of modern science.

03. The earth is (a) — planet. It belongs to (b) — family of (c) — sun centered solar system. This is (d) — most ideal place for human habitation among all (e) — planets so far discovered. (f) — world is full of variety.

04. Every woman is (a) — potential mother. (b) — future of a child depends on how it is brought up. In this case (c) — educated mother plays (d) — important role. She can bring (e) — child up better than (f) — illiterate mother.

05. Patriotism is a noble (a) — virtue. It inspires (b) — man to shed the last drop of blood to defend the freedom of his country. (c) — man without patriotism is no better than (d) — beast. (e) — true patriot thinks for (f) — welfare of his country.

06. Football is (a) — popular game in our country. It is equally exciting to (b) — players and (c) — spectators. It is a foreign (d) — game. It is popular all over (e) — world. It is played in an open (f) — field.

07. (a) — 16th December is a red letter day in the history of Bangladesh. On this day, we achieved victory at the cost of (b) — bloody war. Bangladesh came into being as (c) — independent country. It occupied a place in the world map. Every year we observe (d) — day with due solemnity. We remember (e) — supreme sacrifice of our heroic sons. The day is (f) — public holiday and the national flag is hoisted on the top of each house.

08. Sports are not only a matter of entertainment but also (a) — important aspect of the development of (b) — global relationship. (c) — sports venue is a meeting place of people from different countries. They can come closer to each other and express their views and (d) — opinions. They create (e) — sense of brotherhood among them. Thus they develop a global relationship which is (f) — effective way of globalisation.

09. Newspaper is (a) — paper which carries news of (b) — home and abroad. It is such (c) — important thing without which, we cannot think to pass even (d) — single day. In (e) — educated society, it is regarded as (f) — storehouse of knowledge.

10. My mother is (a) — very religious. She always advises me to follow (b) — path of truth and honesty. She is (c) — affectionate mother. She bears (d) — good moral character. She is very kind to (e) — poor. Actually my mother is (f) — ideal housewife.

11. (a) — Bangladesh is (b) — land of rivers. These are (c) — blessing of Almighty Allah and pride to us. They are closely related to our economy and (d) — property of our (e) — country. We should utilize our (f) — resources properly.

12. People of (a) — developing countries have always been fascinated with (b) — Bangladesh. He had to go by (c) — train from Chittagong. He got to the station just in (d) — time to catch the train. (e) — train left in (f) — schedule time and Masud reached Dhaka at 9 am.

13. Hazrat Omar (R.) was (a) — Second Caliph of Islam. He was (b) — good soldier and kind ruler. He used to go out in disguise to know (b) — condition of his subjects. One night he went out in disguise. Suddenly (c) — sound of crying reached his ears from (d) — nearby hut. He went inside (e) — hut and saw some children crying together.

14. Last Friday Salam stayed at home. At 8 am he was in (a) — kitchen preparing (b) — breakfast. He was roasting (c) — full chicken for his breakfast. The chicken was almost ready when (d) — doorbell rang. He saw a man standing there. (e) — man wanted to inform Salam about (f) — injured friend of his.

15. Dhaka stands on (a) — Buriganga. It is an old city. It is (b) — populous city. People of different religions live in (c) — city in peace and harmony. Dhaka is famous for (d) — mosques. It became (e) — capital first in (f) — 1610.

Answers

01. (a) the (b) a (c) × (d) an (e) the (f) a
02. (a) an (b) an (c) × (d) the (e) the (f) a
03. (a) a (b) the (c) the (d) the (e) the (f) The
04. (a) a (b) The (c) an (d) an (e) a (f) an
05. (a) × (b) a (c) A (d) a (e) A (f) the
06. (a) a (b) the (c) the (c) × (d) the (e) ×
07. (a) The (b) a (c) an (d) the (e) the (f) a
08. (a) an (b) × (c) A (d) × (e) a (f) an
09. (a) a (b) × (c) an (d) a (e) an (f) the
10. (a) × (b) the (c) an (d) a (e) the (f) an
11. (a) × (b) a (c) a (d) × (e) × (f) ×
12. (a) the (b) × (c) × (d) × (e) The (f) the
13. (a) the (b) a (c) the (d) a (e) a (f) the
14. (a) the (b) × (c) a (d) the (e) The (f) an
15. (a) the (b) a (c) the (d) × (e) the (f) ×



আমরা কথা বলার সময় কখনো থামি, কখনো স্বরের পরিবর্তন করি, কখনো অঙ্গভঙ্গি করি যাতে করে শ্রোতার কাছে বক্তব্য সুস• ষ্ট হয়। ঠিক একইভাবে লেখার ক্ষেত্রে এই ব্যাপারগুলো বুঝানোর জন্য কিছু সংকেত ব্যবহার করি। এই সংকেতগুলোকে বলা হয় Punctuations।

উপরের সংজ্ঞা দ্বারা বুঝা যায়, লিখিত বক্তব্যকে শ্রুতিমধুর ও স• ষ্ট করার জন্য Punctuations গুর" ত্বপ– র্ণ ভূমিকা রাখে। লক্ষ কর, নিম্নের একই বাক্য শুধুমাত্র punctuation ব্যবহারে ভিন্নতার কারণে ভিন্ন অর্থ প্রকাশ করে :

I hate (ঘৃণা করা) liars like Rahim, I believe that honesty is the best policy. (রহিমের মত মিথ্যাবাদীদের আমি ঘৃণা করি, আমি বিশ্বাস করি সততাই সর্বোৎকৃষ্ট পন্থা-এখানে রহিমকে মিথ্যাবাদী বুঝানো হয়েছে।)

I hate liars; like Rahim, I believe that honesty is the best policy. (মিথ্যাবাদীদের আমি ঘৃণা করি, রহিমের মত আমি বিশ্বাস করি সততাই সর্বোৎকৃষ্ট পন্থা-এখানে রহিমকে সত্যবাদী বুঝানো হয়েছে।)

লেখার সময় আমরা যে Punctuations ব্যবহার করি তা নিম্নরূপ:

English name	Symbol	Punctuation
ইংরেজি নাম	সাংকেতিক চিহ্ন	বিরামের সময়
Full stop	(.)	সাধারণত ১ সেকেন্ড
Semi-Colon	(;)	Full stop এর অর্ধেক
Comma	(,)	Semi Colon এর অর্ধেক
Question Mark	(?)	সাধারণত ১ সেকেন্ড
Exclamatory Mark	(!)	সাধারণত ১ সেকেন্ড
Colon	(:)	সাধারণত ১ সেকেন্ড
Colon Dash	(:–)	সাধারণত ১ সেকেন্ড
Dash	(—)	সাধারণত ১ সেকেন্ড
Inverted Comma	(" ")	সাধারণত ১ সেকেন্ড
Apostrophe	(')	সাধারণত ১ সেকেন্ড
Hyphen	—	থামার দরকার নেই

Punctuation Mark -এর ব্যবহার

1. **Full stop-দাঁড়ি (.) :**
Assertive, Imperative এবং Optative Sentence এর শেষে (.) ব্যবহৃত হয়।
He goes to school.
May Allah bless you.
Do the work.
Full stop-কে dot (ডট) বলা হয়। E-mail, Internet লিখতে full stop ব্যবহৃত হয়। যেমন–
www. anupambd.com

2. **Comma-কমা (,) :**
(i) দিন ও মাসের নামের মাঝে কমা (,) ব্যবহার করা হয়। যেমন : The annual sports of our school is on Saturday, January 10.
(ii) মাস ও বছরের নামের মধ্যে কমা (,) ব্যবহার করা হয়।
Susmita was born on June 15, 2010.
(iii) কারও উক্তি সরাসরি বাক্যে ব্যবহার করতে চাইলে তার প– র্বে কমা ব্যবহৃত হয়। যেমন :
He said to Sakil, "Today, I'll take you to see the Mohakhali Flyover."
(iv) Hello, Yes, No, Well, But, Alright ইত্যাদি word যদি বাক্যের শুর" তে বসে তাহলে এগুলোর পর Comma দিতে হয়। যেমন :
Yes, I think you're right.

3. **Question Mark-প্রশ্নবোধক চিহ্ন (?) :**
কাউকে সরাসরি প্রশ্ন করা হলে Question mark (প্রশ্নবোধক চিহ্ন) ব্যবহৃত হয়। যেমন :
What is your name?

4. **Exclamatory Mark-বি□স্ময়সূচক চি□ (!) :**
কোনো Sentence-এ যদি অনুভূতি, অভিলাষ, বিস্ময়, উল্লাস বা মনের কোনো আকস্মিক আবেগ প্রকাশিত হয়, তাহলে শেষে Exclamatory mark বসে। যেমন–
What a beautiful scenery it is!
Alas! He is no more.

5. **Hyphen-সংযোগ চিহ্ন (–) :**
সাধারণত Compound word-এ দুইটি বা তিনটি অংশ একত্রে যোগ করতে Hyphen (–) ব্যবহৃত হয়। যেমন :
I love home-made cakes.
সাধারণত Compound number-এ hyphen (–) ব্যবহৃত হয়। যেমন :
Twenty–one, Twenty–two.

6. **Colon-দৃষ্টান্ত'ছেদ (:) :**
সেমিকোলনের চেয়ে অধিক সময় থামতে হলে Colon ব্যবহার করা হয়।
Please, send me the following necessary things : a cap, a knife and a shoe.

7. **Semi–Colon– দৃষ্টান্ত'ছেদ (;) :**
Comma-এর চেয়ে অধিক সময় থামতে হলে Semi-colon (;) ব্যবহৃত হয়। যেমন :
It is easy to say; but difficult to do.

8. **Dash-দীর্ঘ সংযোগ) (—) :**
ব্যাখ্যা দেয়ার জন্য শব্দসম– হকে পৃথক করতে Dash বসে। যেমন–I sold many things— papers, pens, books.

9. **Apostrophe-লোপচিহ্ন (') :**
নিম্নলিখিত ক্ষেত্রে Apostrophe ব্যবহৃত হয় :
(i) Noun সম– হের Possessive case গঠন করতে অর্থাৎ "এর" বুঝাতে apostrophe ব্যবহৃত হয়। যেমন–
Rahim's mother is ill for 7 days.
(ii) Contraction (শব্দ সংক্ষেপ) বা দু'টো শব্দকে সংক্ষেপে যুক্ত করতে Apostrophe (') ব্যবহৃত হয়। যেমন–
Don't disturb me.
(iii) সময় উল্লেখ করতে apostrophe (') ব্যবহৃত হয়। যেমন–
It is 4 o'clock.

10. **Quotation Mark—**উদ্ধৃতি চিহ্ন (" ")
কোনো বইয়ের নাম বা কোনো word-কে নির্দেশ করলে Quotation Mark বসাতে হয়। যেমন–
I read "Agnibina."
I read "Gitanjalli."

Use of Capital Letter

১. বাক্য আরম্ভ করার সময় Capital letter হয়–-
Once there was a hare. He was walking beside a forest.

২. কবিতার প্রতি পংক্তির প্রথম অক্ষরটি Capital letter হয়।–
Tick, tock! Tick, tock!
Merrily sings the clock.

৩. বাক্যের মধ্যে কিছু উদ্ধৃত করা হলে বা প্রত্যক্ষ উক্তিতে প্রথম অক্ষরটি Capital letter হয়–
Father said to me, "Go to school."

৪. Proper Noun (ব্যক্তি, বস্তু, প্রাণী, স্থান, দিন, মাস বা কোন

holycrossrajshahi.com

কিছুর নিজস্ব নাম) এর প্রতিটি শব্দের প্রথম Letter টি Capital letter হয়–
16 December is the Victory Day of Bangladesh.

৫. Proper Noun থেকে উৎপন্ন কোনো Adjective লিখতে হলে Capital Letter দিয়ে আরম্ভ করতে হয়।–
I like Bangladeshi food.

৬. অফিসিয়াল পদ মর্যাদা, শিক্ষাগত ডিগ্রিকে সংক্ষিপ্তরূপে প্রকাশ করলে Capital Letter হয়–
USA, UK, BDO, SDO, BA, MA, MB, etc.

৭. ঈশ্বরের নাম বা তাঁর পরিবর্তে যে Pronoun বসে তার প্রথম অক্ষর সর্বদাই Capital letter হয় :
Pray to God for His blessings.

৮. 'I' আমি অর্থে সব জায়গায় Capital letter হয় :
I can do this work. It is I who can do this work.

৯. সম্বোধন করার সময় :
Dear Sir, My Dear Mother, My Dear Uncle, etc.

১০. মর্যাদাপ– র্ণ title বা designation লেখার ক্ষেত্রে :
The Headmaster, The Principal, The President, The Secretary, etc.

Practice .....

A. Put a **comma** where necessary.
At the railway station Atik bought a story book a trouser a pencil and a dictionary. The book which he bought is very informative. Soon the train blew the whistle to leave. We ran fast but couldn't catch the train. As the station was crowded we decided to leave as soon as possible.

B. Put a **colon** where needed.
There are several punctuation marks according to English grammar full stop, comma, semicolon, colon, hyphen, apostrophe, inverted comma etc. We should be careful that the appropriate punctuation marks must be put where necessary. The right way is to follow the rules.

C. Put a **question mark** where necessary.
Gentleman : Boy, I shall ask you some questions. Would you answer my questions.
Boy : Yes, please.
Gentleman : What is your name.
Boy : My name is Manzur.
Gentleman : Would you please tell me what your father is.
Boy : My father is a teacher.
Gentleman : I want to ask you some questions to test your general knowledge.
Boy : Sure, sir.
Gentleman : Do you know who discovered the theory of gravity.
Boy : Yes, I know. It was Isaac Newton.
Gentleman : Who was the first Mogul emperor.
Boy : Jahiruddin Muhammad Babar.
Gentleman : You are a good boy. You know a lot Thank you.

D. Put a **semi colon** where necessary.
I got up early in the morning I washed my hands and face I had my breakfast. Thereafter I went to college I sat on the first bench I heard the lecture well I took notes of every point.

E. Put an **exclamation mark** where necessary.
1. What a pity
2. My goodness
3. Hurrah We have won the game.
4. Oh my friend Do not disturb me.
5. Alas I am undone

F. Put an **inverted commas** where necessary.
Have you cut your hair off? asked Jim. Cut it off and sold it, said Della. Don't you like me just as well, anyhow? I'm me without my hair, ain't I?

G. Use appropriate punctuation marks and capital letters where necessary.

01. tea grows in the hilly regions it specially grows in the sloppy places it grows in plenty in bangladesh, india etc in Bangladesh, sylhet and chittagong are suitable for the production of tea presently it is cultivated at panchagarh.

02. they said, whats this Let's go out to find out we might learn something from it. Suddenly a voice said "Good morning gentlemen where're you going?"

03. the eiffel tower is a lattice tower is paris it was built in 1889. now it symbolizes the cultural icon of france the tower is famous as the tallest construction in paris millions of people ascend it every year It is 320 metres tall about the same height as an 81 storeyed building

04. during the last summer vacation I and some of my friends went to cox's bazar. We booked a hotel near the sea beach I had never seen the sea before so I had a curiosity to see the sea. In the next morning when we got up from bed we went to take a walk on the sea beach we passed a few happy hours by the sea beach.

05. they had played together in infancy they had worked together in manhood they are now tottering about and gossiping away in the evening of life and in a short time they will probably be buried together in the neighboring churchyard.

06. mount everest is the highest mountain in the world it was named after an english named george everest who was the first to survey the himalayas in 1841

07. thomas alva edison was born in 1847 in ohio america as a little boy he was very inquisitive very early in life he showed that he was full of curiosity a quality which is so important to inventors

08. salam and kalam are best friends they are very interested to learn english one day alam said to them will you learn english then read an english paper named the daily star.

09. i have removed all the mice from hamelin now give me promised money said the pied piper

10. man is mortal everybody must die someone welcomes death in smiling face on the other hand someone dies many times before death they are

cowards we should not behave like cowards

11. aman dont be so silly he will come soon said rimon we need not wait for him he failed his words replied kamal

12. what is the time by your watch said he half past nine I replied I want to go to college he said would you accompany me please no i am sorry.

13. climate change has already started bringing disasters to bangladesh we remember the damage caused by the aila in 2009 climate change victims are increasing in number everyday

14. the word library came from the latin word libra which means a book so library is a collection of books papers magazines etc it is the storehouse of knowledge our school library has about 50 thousand books on different subjects.

Answers

A. Put a **comma** where necessary.

At the railway station, Atik bought a story book, a trouser, a pencil and a dictionary. The book which he bought is very informative. Soon, the train blew the whistle to leave. We ran fast but couldn't catch the train. As the station was crowded, we decided to leave as soon as possible.

B. Put a **colon** where needed.

There are several punctuation marks according to English grammar : full stop, comma, semicolon, colon, hyphen, apostrophe, inverted comma etc. We should be careful that the appropriate punctuation marks must be put where necessary. The right way is to follow the rules.

C. Put a **question mark** where necessary.

Gentleman : Boy, I shall ask you some questions. Would you answer my questions?
Boy : Yes, please.
Gentleman : What is your name?
Boy : My name is Manzur.
Gentleman : Would you please tell me what your father is?
Boy : My father is a teacher.
Gentleman : I want to ask you some questions to test your general knowledge.
Boy : Sure, sir.
Gentleman : Do you know who discovered the theory of gravity?
Boy : Yes, I know. It was Isaac Newton.
Gentleman : Who was the first Mogul emperor?
Boy : Jahiruddin Muhammad Babar.
Gentleman : You are a good boy. You know a lot. Thank you.

D. Put a **semi colon** where necessary.

I got up early in the morning; I washed my hands and face; I had my breakfast. Thereafter; I went to college; I sat on the first bench; I heard the lecture well; I took notes of every point.

E. Put an **exclamation mark** where necessary.

1. What a pity!
2. My goodness!
3. Hurrah! We have won the game.
4. Oh my friend! Do not disturb me.
5. Alas! I am undone.

F. Put an **inverted commas** where necessary.

"Have you cut your hair off?" asked Jim. "Cut it off and sold it," said Della. "Don't you like me just as well, anyhow? I'm me without my hair, ain't I?"

G. Use appropriate punctuation marks and capital letters where necessary.

01. Tea grows in the hilly regions. It specially grows in the sloppy places. It grows in plenty in Bangladesh, India etc. In Bangladesh, Sylhet and Chittagong are suitable for the production of tea. Presently it is cultivated at Panchagarh.

02. They said, "What's this? Let's go out to find out. We might learn something from it." Suddenly a voice said, "Good morning, gentlemen. Where're you going?"

03. The Eiffel Tower is a lattice tower in Paris. It was built in 1889. Now it symbolizes the cultural icon of France. The tower is famous as the tallest construction in Paris. Millions of people ascend it every year. It is 320 metres tall, about the same height as an 81 storeyed building.

04. During the last summer vacation, I and some of my friends went to Cox's Bazar. We booked a hotel near the sea beach. I had never seen the sea before. So I had a curiosity to see the sea. In the next morning, when we got up from bed, we went to take a walk on the sea beach. We passed a few happy hours by the sea beach.

05. They had played together in infancy; they had worked together in manhood; they are now tottering about and gossiping away in the evening of life and in a short time; they will probably be buried together in the neighbouring churchyard.

06. Mount Everest is the highest mountain in the world. It was named after an English named George Everest who was the first to survey the Himalayas in 1841.

07. Thomas Alva Edison was born in 1847, in Ohio, America. As a little boy, he was very inquisitive. Very early in life, he showed that he was full of curiosity, a quality which is so important to inventors.

08. Salam and Kalam are best friends. They are very interested to learn English. One day Alam said to them, "Will you learn English? Then read an English paper named 'The Daily Star'."

09. "I have removed all the mice from Hamelin. Now, give me promised money," said the pied piper.

10. Man is mortal. Everybody must die. Someone welcomes death in smiling face. On the other hand, someone dies many times before death. They are cowards. We should not behave like cowards.

11. "Aman, don't be so silly. He will come soon," said Rimon. "We need not wait for him. He failed his words," replied Kamal.

12. "What is the time by your watch?" said he. "Half past nine," I replied. "I want to go to college," he said. "Would you accompany me, please?" "No, I am sorry."

13. Climate change has already started bringing disasters

holycrossrajshahi.com

to Bangladesh. We remember the damage caused by the Aila in 2009. Climate change victims are increasing in number everyday.

14. The word 'Library' came from the Latin word 'Libra' which means a book. So, library is a collection of books, papers, magazines etc. It is the storehouse of knowledge. Our school library has about 50 thousand books on different subjects.



Linkers



কথা বলার সময় বা কোন কিছু লেখার সময় বাক্যগুলোর মধ্যে সঙ্গতি (coherence) বা চিন্ত্রার চলমানতা (flow of thought) বজায় রাখার জন্য বা দুটি বাক্যাংশকে সংযুক্ত করার জন্য আমরা বিভিন্ন শব্দ ব্যবহার করি। এগুলোকে linking words বা linkers বলা হয়। নিচের বাক্যগুলো লক্ষ কর :

(a) I enjoyed German, **even though** I was not very good at it.
(b) He is short and not really handsome, **but** women still find him attractive.
(c) I do not really need a new car. **Besides,** I cannot afford one.
(d) It is fast and comfortable. It is economical, **too**.

উপরের a ও b বাক্যে দেখা যা" ছ even though ও but দুটি বাক্যাংশকে সংযুক্ত করেছে। আবার c ও d নম্বরে দেখা যা" ছ besides ও too তার প– র্ববর্তী বাক্যের সাথে সঙ্গতি রক্ষা করেছে। এভাবে বিবেচনা করলে আমরা প্রধানত দুই ধরনের linkers পা" ছ।

(i) Discourse Markers: প– র্ববর্তী বাক্যের সাথে সঙ্গতি রক্ষা করে
(ii) Conjunctions: দুটি বাক্যাংশকে সংযুক্ত করে

Discourse Markers

After all (মোটের উপর)–You should not disobey him. After all, he is your elder brother.
Any way/ any how (যাহোক/ অন্ত্রতঃ)–It is too late now. Any way, you can try.
Actually (আসলে/প্রকৃতপক্ষে)–He stood first. Actually, he is very meritorious.
As a result (ফলে)–I was ill. As a result, I could not go to college.
Above all (সর্বোপরি)–Above all, he is an honest man.
Accordingly (যথারীতি)–They decided to contribute to the fund. Accordingly, they deposited money in the bank.
Afterward(s) (পরে)–He suffered a lot. Afterward(s), God took pity on him.
Again (আবার)–He failed in the exam. Again, he lost his father during the course of exam.
As an illustration (নিদর্শনস্বরূপ)–Fat increases weight of body. As an illustration, Mamun took a lot of oily foods and became bulky.
As has been stated (যেমনটি)–The standards at the hospitals, as has been stated, are dropping.
As I have shown (প্রমাণ দেওয়া)–As I have shown, his arguments are weak and cannot be accepted.
As proof (প্রমাণস্বরূপ)–He went to the club last night. As proof, look at this photographs.
Besides (তাছাড়াও)–He gave me good advice. Besides, he helped me financially.
Below (নিচে)–Answer the questions given below.
Consequently/ So/ Therefore (ফলশ্রুতিতে/ যার ফলে/ অতএব/ সুতরাং)–You feel unwell. Consequently/So/ Therefore, you should consult a doctor.
Earlier (আগে)–He joined the company as a manager last year. Earlier, he was working as a commercial officer in another company.
Even though (যদিও/তথাপিও)–He reached the station in time. Even though, he started later.
Finally (অবশেষে)–After his failure, the man worked very hard. Finally he succeeded.
For Example (উদাহরণস্বরূপ/ যেমন)–Honesty is the capital of business. For example, the honest man, Mr. Rahman made a lot of progress in his business.
First (প্রথমত)–First he dressed up and then he started for college.
For instance (উদাহরণস্বরূপ)–Bangladesh has developed a lot. For instance, our GDP has increased.
For this purpose (এই উদ্দেশ্যে)–He wants to stand first. For this purpose, he is reading sincerely.
For this reason (এজন্য)–He is lazy. For this reason, he could not prosper in life.
Furthermore (আরও)–He was arrested. Furthermore, he was jailed.
Gradually (ধীরে ধীরে)–He started a business and made profit. Gradually he became a rich man.
However/ Nevertheless (যাহোক/ তবুও/ তথাপিও)–You have come late. However/Nevertheless, you should start the work
Immediately (শীঘ্রই/ তাৎক্ষণিক)–He cried for help in the wilderness. Immediately an old man came up and rescued him.
In a few days (অল্প সময়ের মধ্যে)–He will come round in a few days.
In addition (আরও)–He was promoted. In addition, he got some monetary help.
In any event (তথাপি)–I think she'll agree to do it but in any event, she can say 'no'.
In brief (সংক্ষেপে)–He is pious, benevolent and truthful. In brief, he is an honest man.
In case (যদি)–What will you do in case you fail?
In conclusion (উপসংহারে)–In conclusion, we can say that he is honest.
In contrast (তুলনায়)–In contrast, a village is a better place to live in than a town.
In fact (প্রকৃতপক্ষে)–He stood first. In fact, he is meritorious.
In front of (সম্মুখে)–There is a garden in front of my reading room.
In order that (যাতে)–He took regular physical

exercise in order that he could be healthy.
In other words (অন্যভাবে)–They asked him to leave. In other words he was fired.
In spite of (সত্ত্বেও)–In spite of working hard, he could not prosper in life.
In summary (সংক্ষেপে)–In summary, this was a disappointing performance.
In the same way (একইভাবে)–He worked hard and secured good results in the exam. In the same way, he built up a good career by labour.
Instead (পরিবর্তে)–He did not learn his lesson. Instead, he started playing.
Indeed (সত্যিই/ আসলেই)–The officer never takes bribe. Indeed, he is an honest man.
In fact (বাস্তবিক পক্ষে)–I cannot but help him. In fact, he is my relative.
Just as (ঠিক মুহূর্তে)–He reached the station just as the train was leaving.
Just like (ঠিক একই)–The boy is just like his brother.
Later (পরে)–He got a suitable job. Later he married a beautiful girl.
Meanwhile (ইতোমধ্যে)–He has recently got a good job. Meanwhile, he has completed MBA.
Moreover (অধিকন্তু/ তাছাড়া)–He is a good player. Moreover, he is an artist.
Next (পরবর্তী)–He is primarily a poet. Next, he is an artist.
Now (এখন)–He has completed MA. Now he is serving in a college.
Naturally (স্বভাবতই/ স্বাভাবিকভাবেই)–Their father has expired lately. Naturally, they are shocked.
Of course (অবশ্যই/ নিশ্চই)–Will you go with him? Of course, I won't go.
Only (তবে কিনা)–You may come in. Only, keep silent.
On the contrary (পক্ষান্তরে)–He did not hate you. On the contrary, he loved you.
On the whole/ Over all (সর্বোপরি/ সবকিছু বিচার করে)–I touched all the questions. On the whole/Over all, the examination was satisfactory.
Otherwise (তা না হলে/ অন্যথায়)–Read attentively. Otherwise, you will fail.
On one side (একদিকে)–On one side, the kitchen market is dirty and on the other, prices of commodities are high here.
On the other hand (পক্ষান্তরে)–Public University is cheaper. On the other hand, Private University is expensive.
On top of (অধিকন্তু)–On top of everything, I want back my car that has been stolen.
Plus (যোগ/ তাছাড়া)–He was fined. Plus, he was physically assaulted.
Previously (পূর্বে)–I made a mistake in uttering her name. Previously I made another mistake in spelling her name.
Similarly (একইভাবে)–The United States won most of the track and field events. Similarly, in swimming, the top three places went to the Americans.
Specifically (সুনির্দিষ্টভাবে)–Specifically, you need to take extra caution when you will talk to her.
Still (এখনও)–Science has developed, still people die from starvation.
Surely (নিশ্চিতভাবে)–He is meritorious. Surely, he will pass.
Then (তারপর)–The boy finished his studies. Then he went to bed.
Thus (এভাবে)–He tried heart and soul. Thus, he prospered in life.
To be specific (নিশ্চিত হওয়া)–To be specific, he is incapable of solving the problem.
To repeat (পুনরাবৃত্তি করা)–To repeat, he has no capacity to perform the job.
To sum up (সংক্ষেপে)–To sum up, there are only three ways of tackling the problem.
Too (ও)–He loves her and she loves him too.
Truly (সত্যিকারে)–Truly, he is an honest man.
Wherever (সেসব/ ওইসব/ জায়গায়)–You may go wherever you like.
Without any doubt (নিঃসন্দেহে)–She will pass without any doubt.
Yet (তবুও)–He is rich enough. Yet, he is not happy.

Conjunctions

ইংরেজি বাক্যে বহুলব্যবহৃত linkers হলো Conjunctions। এরা দুটি বাক্যাংশকে সংযুক্ত করে শুধু sentence-ই গঠন করে না; বাক্যাংশ দুটির অর্থ কিভাবে সম্পর্কযুক্ত তাও প্রকাশ করে।

আলোচনার জন্য ১৩নং Lesson টি দেখ।

Practice

A. Fill in the gaps with suitable sentence connectors from the box.

01.

and	Sometimes	quite	that	where

Dear Sharmila,
How are you? I'm writing to share with you a plan (a) — I have. I know some old, physically weak and lonely people in our town. Some of them are (b) — well-off and some are not. But they all share one common thing that is they live alone (c) — have no one to take care of them in sickness. (d) — they don't have anybody to talk to.

I have a plan. I want to set up a home for the old people (e) — they would live like a family and we can be a part of that family, too. I need your help and I know that together we can do a lot.

Write to me soon. I'll wait eagerly for your reply.

Your friend,
Suraiya

02.

If	or	too	Moreover	But

For a minor burn injury the doctor may prescribe you a tube of Burnol ointment. (a) — for the same, a rural grandma may put some aloevera or honey on it. (b) — children have cold in our

holycrossrajshahi.com

country, grandmas give them honey and tulsi leaves to eat. And it works (c) —. If you have a minor cut (d) — wound, grown-ups may put some turmeric, marigold or aloevera on it. Rural people instinctively use garlic, neem or turmeric to cure skin problems. With experience they have seen that these remedies work. (e) —, they are easy to get, are cheap and most often without any side effects. In absence of a doctor, people depend on these sorts of natural home remedies.

03.

also	as well	that	If	and

A proverb goes (a) — 'Health is Wealth'. To keep healthy is to keep free from disease and anxiety. Good health is proper functioning of all body organs. It is (b) — feeling well both in body (c) — in mind. People in good health are active, cheerful and happy. (d) — you are healthy, you can be happy and can help others in society (e) —

04.

than	However	also	So	where

The Taj Mahal is (a) — known as "the Taj". It is a white marble tomb located in Agra in India. Do you know the story behind the Taj Mahal? The Mughal emperor, Shah Jahan loved his wife Mumtaz Mahal more (b) — his life. Mumtaz died at an early age. Shah Jahan was very shocked at her death. (c) — he built the Taj Mahal as a token of love for his wife. It is the place (d) — Mumtaz is sleeping for ever.

The Taj has an area of about 1003 acres or 405 hectares. The Taj Mahal is the finest example of Mughal architecture. It combines the art of Persia, Turky, and India. It took 21 years and thousands of artisans and craftsmen to complete the Taj Mahal. (e) —, the Taj is universally admired as one of the wonders of the world.

05.

So	Suddenly	But	and	when

Shikha Banu works as a waitress in a restaurant in Chittagong. She takes orders (a) — serves food to customers. (b) — today, the chief cook has suddenly fallen ill. (c) — , she is helping the other cooks in the kitchen. She is making 'pudding'. She is thinking of her son, Priyam. How he loves pudding! She wants to make a pudding for Priyam (d) — she goes back home today. (e) — she hears someone say, "The pudding is done, apa. Shall I take it off the oven?" With a start Shikha Banu says "Oh, yes. Please do".

B. Fill in the gaps with suitable sentence connectors.

01. 21st February is a red letter day in our national history. It is our pride (a) — no nation of the world has ever fought for its language the way we fought. So it has been now declared as International Mother Language Day. The proposal has been passed unanimously in the General Assembly of UNESCO (b) — some countries pointed out (c) — the incident of 21st February is related to the Bangalees only. (d) — the recognition of the day (e) — International Mother Language Day by UNESCO has uphold the prestige of Bangalees all over the world.

02. Most of our students cannot write out their examination paper fairly well. (a) — they cannot understand the questions properly, they often memorize their answers. (b) — they also fail to arrange their answers neatly, clearly and precisely (c) — they often lengthen them unnecessarily. They have a silly notion that the more they write, the more will be their marks. (d) — the reality is just the opposite. (e) — they must understand the questions well and answer them just to the point, and they have to give up the idea of memorizing.

03. Water is an important element of the environment. (a) — it is essential for living, it is called life. But polluted water is harmful (b) — it causes dangerous diseases. Polluted water causes not only diseases (c) — death. (d) — polluted water is dangerous, illiterate people drink it. We should prevent water pollution (e) — we may get safe and sound environment.

04. From my school days I heard a lot about college life, (a) — I was eagerly waiting for that happy and romantic college life. (b) — the cherished day came. It was the 26th October 1992. (c) — I reached the college, I found the whole college campus crowded by lots of young pupils. (d) — all of them were unknown to me, I felt very lonely. (e) — I met one of my school friends. I was relieved.

05. Tea plants grow well on hillsides (a) — the rainfall is abundant (b) — water does not stand. In rainy season, tea seeds are at first sown in a nursery. The seedlings are then transplanted over vast areas in rows at short intervals. (c) — a certain stage in its growth, twigs are carefully pruned (d) — it cannot reach to the height more (e) — three to five feet or so.

06. Population problem is the burning question of Bangladesh. (a) — it can be termed as number one problem. (b) — the population of a country is an asset, it has already become a great problem in our country. (c) — the country cannot afford to give people the basic necessaries of life. (d) — food, clothing, education, medicine and shelter are the basic necessaries of life. (e) — our country cannot provide these equally to all.

07. (a) — I was returning to Dhaka from Barisal by launch. The weather was ok and the sky was clear. (b) — we all the passengers were in a jolly mood enjoying the scenic beauty of the banks. (c) — after the sunset the weather turned rough. Black clouds gathered with ghastly wind, (d) — a serious storm rose. We were terribly frightened. The launch was not very big. (e) — there was no life boat in that vessel. We all began to name the Almighty.

08. Families in towns and villagers use a number of polybags each day. They do not preserve these (a) — they throw those bags away. This act of people causes pollution to the environment. They do not get rotten (b) — they remain mixed with various wastes. Sometimes, they get accumulated in drains and stop their proper flow. (c) — , polybags need to be disposed properly. (d) — how can this be done? (e) — they are burnt, they give out black smoke and bad smell to pollute air.

09. Liberty has to be obtained by a way of long drawn struggle (a) — even a bloody war. But (b) — it is achieved the struggle or the war ends. Then comes the question of maintaining the liberty earned at a great cost and sacrifice. But to maintain the liberty of a nation is a very difficult task. It is even more difficult (c) — to achieve it. National liberty in the true sense is (d) — political and economic liberty (e) — freedom from poverty and illiteracy.

10. A cook once roasted a duck for his master. The roast looked so delicious (a) — the cook could not resist the temptation (b) — ate up one of the drumsticks. (c) — his master sat down to eat, he quickly noticed the missing leg and asked (d) — had happened to the other leg. The cook told him that the duck had one leg only. The master was not to be fooled. He said that there was no such thing (e) — a one legged duck. The cook insisted that this duck had only one leg.

Answers

01. (a) that (b) quite (c) and (d) Sometimes (e) where
02. (a) But (c) If (c) too (d) or (e) Moreover
03. (a) that (b) also (c) and (d) If (e) as well
04. (a) also (b) than (c) So (d) Where (e) However
05. (a) and (b) But (c) After (d) so that (e) than

B.

01. (a) as (b) where (c) that (d) So (e) as
02. (a) Because (b) Besides (c) and (d) But (e) So
03. (a) As (b) because (c) but also (d) Though (e) so that
04. (a) so (b) At last (c) When (d) As (e) Suddenly
05. (a) where (b) but (c) At (d) so that (e) than
06. (a) And (b) Though (c) Moreover (d) Undoubtedly/ Obviously (e) But
07. (a) Once (b) And (c) But (d) then (e) Even
08. (a) and (b) and so (c) Normally (d) But (e) When
09. (a) and (b) after (c) than (d) not only (e) but also
10. (a) that (b) and (c) When (d) what (e) as



Substitution Table 18

এই অংশে সফলতার জন্য ছাত্রছাত্রীদের বাক্য গঠন সম• র্কে ভাল ধারণা থাকতে হবে। একটি Assertive বাক্যগঠণে সাধারণত আমরা নিম্নের Structure গুলো ব্যবহার করি। নিম্নের Structure গুলোর উপর তোমাদের স• ষ্ট ধারণা থাকলে তোমরা সহজেই Substitution Table থেকে বাক্য গঠন করতে পারবে। Substitution Table তিন বা চার Column এ হতে পারে। তবে NCTB কর্তৃক প্রণীত Sample Question এর ক্ষেত্রে তিনটি Column থাকায় তোমাদের অনুশীলনের জন্য তিনটি Column এর Table দেওয়া হলো।

Structure–1

Subject + Intransitive Verb

Dogs	bark.
Hasina	is sleeping.

যে Verb এর অর্থ প্রকাশ করতে Object দরকার হয় না তাকে Intransitive Verb বলে।

(a)

A	B	C
A tall man	came	across the road.
He	dropped	to a bend.
A big snake	was walking	there suddenly.
The man	ran	away.
The stick	was lying	along a country road.
It	stopped	scared.
	got	from his hand.

(b)

A	B	C
Kamal	exercises	at seven o'clock.
He	breakfasts	in a hall of residence.
	reads	very hard.
	lives	heartily at eight o'clock.
	works	in the library in the afternoon.
	gets up	to class at half-past eight.
	goes	vigorously for half an hour.

Structure–2

Subject + Linking Verb + Adjective Complement

Ali	is	tall.
Honey	tastes	sweet.

Linking verb: যে Verb এর পর কোন Noun/ Pronoun বা Adjective বসে Subject কে বর্ণনা করে তাকে Linking verb বলে। এই verb এর সংখ্যা সীমিত। এর মধ্যে *be* সবচেয়ে বেশি ব্যবহৃত হয়। নিচে structure 2-এর উদাহরণ দেওয়া হলো :

(a) I am happy
(b) Mina is intelligent
(c) You are kind
(d) Belal was ill
(e) Hamid and Hakim were absent
(f) Karim may be ill
(g) You are being impatient
(h) The sky has been cloudy.
(i) Rahim appears healthy.
(j) The merchant became poor.

(a)

holycrossrajshahi.com

A	B	C
Kamal	stood	unpleasant.
Professor Huq	was	dumbfounded.
The professor	surprised	at this reaction.
Then his manner	was	late for his class.
His voice	looked	speechless.
However, he	became	unable to speak.
But he	grew	strident.
He		ready to apologize.
		angry with him.

(b)

A	B	C
Wordsworth	stood	comparable to the stars.
The daffodils	was	spellbound.
They	seemed	full of joy.
But the pleasure	were	not simply momentary.
		delighted to see daffodils.

Structure–3

Subject + Linking Verb + Complement (Noun)

Kabir is a farmer.
Mina became a nurse.

মনে রাখতে হবে যে অত্যন্ত সীমিত সংখ্যক linking verb এই structure এ ব্যবহার করা যাবে। *Be, become* ছাড়া অন্যান্য যে সব linking verb এই structure এ ব্যবহৃত হয় সেগুলো হলো :

appear prove
feel remain
look turn

Examples :

The conference appeared a success.
Helal felt a complete fool.
Mina looks an angel.
The experiment proved a failure.
Your plan seems a good one.
The ambassador turned a traitor.

(a)

A	B	C
Mr. Ali	became	a lawyer.
So he	was	a judge of the Supreme Court.
He	was	a successful lawyer.
	appointed	a bright student of Law.
	remained	a lawyer for fifteen years.
		an intelligent and eloquent man.

(b)

A	B	C
Siraj-ud-doula	is	a disaster for Siraj-ud-doula.
His struggle	proved	a patriotic young man.
Mir Jafor	must have felt	traitor at the battle of Plassey.
As a result, the	was remains turned	a tragic figure in the history.
battles		for a betrayed man.
He		proof of his patriotism.

Structure–4

Subject + *Be* Verb + Complement (Adverbial)

Farjana is in the kitchen
Bobi is in the library

A	B	C
Kazi Nazrul Islam	was	from Burdwan in West Bengal.
He		of poor parents.
		deprived of formal education.
		fond of singing and acting.
		in World War I.

Structure–5

Subject + Transitive Verb + Object (Noun/ Pronoun)

Kamal speaks English.
Monica has bought an umbrella.

A	B	C
Hasan	refused	him three times a day.
He	examined	a vet.
One day	used to feed	him profusely.
Tom	asked	Tom.
The vet	prescribed	him with soap occasionally.
Tom	had thanked	some medicine.
	called	Hasan not to worry.
	would wash	to eat anything.
		only a stomach-upset.
		a nice dog called Tom.

Structure–6

Subject + Transitive Verb + Object (Noun/ Pronoun) + Complement (Adjective)

We found the poem difficult.
The nurse kept the baby quiet.

কতকগুলো transitive verb এমনভাবে ব্যবহৃত হয় যে সেগুলোর পরে object বসালেও সম• – র্ণ অর্থ প্রকাশ করে না। সেই সব verb-এর ক্ষেত্রে object-এর পরে একটি adjective-complement বসাতে হয়। নিচে সেই সব verb এর তালিকাসহ উদাহরণ দেওয়া হলো :

get/ got/ got	Her mother is getting breakfast ready.
leave/ left/ left	He left the door open.
make/ made/ made	They made themselves comfortable.
turn/ turned/ turned	Grief turned his hair white.
break/ broke/ broken	The thieves broke (burst, forced) the door open.
consider/ considered/ considered	I consider him (to be) clever.
find/ found/ found	I found him (to be) dishonest.

holycrossrajshahi.com

think/ though/ thought	They think Karim (to be) clever.
feel/ felt/ felt	They felt the plan to be unwise.

(a)

A	B	C
The burglars They The owner of the house He The accused The judge	found caught broke got pronounced supposed	the door open. the house to be empty. them red-handed. themselves unable to defend their act in the court. them guilty. his pistol ready.

(b)

A	B	C
Mrs. Hasina This She They But argument	made held thought might have driven found	the drawing-room dirty. the accusation untrue. her mad. her very unhappy. the children responsible for the mess.

Structure–7

Subject + Transitive + Object (Noun/ Pronoun) + Complement (Noun)

We elected Karim secretary.
They appointed him headmaster.

এই structure-এ verb-এর পরে দুটি noun বসে এবং দুটি noun-ই একই ব্যক্তি বা বস্তুকে বুঝায়। যে সব noun এই structure-এ ব্যবহার করা যায় তাদের সংক্ষিপ্ত তালিকা নিচে দেওয়া হলো :

appoint/ appointed/ appointed	They appointed him headmaster.
crown/ crowned/ crowned	The people crowned him king.
label/ labelled/ labeleld	They labeleld him a demagogue.
name/ named/ named	Mr. and Mrs. Hakim named their son Rahim.
elect/ elected/ elected	We elected Mr. Hasan secretary of the club.

(a)

A	B	C
Mr. A.K. Fazul Huq He The people They	proved have always regarded considered nicknamed	him Sher-e-Bangla, the tiger of Bengal. himself to be a courageous man. it a great honour to serve the people. him as a great national leader.

(b)

A	B	C
The whole world But some people in Athens They We	also denounced condemned believe considers found	him as a bad influence upon the youth. him to be a dangerous person. him as an impious man. it a pity to have put Socrates to death. Socrates a wise man.

Structure–8

Subject + Transitive + Indirect Object + Direct Object (noun/ pronoun)

They awarded Shamim a prize.
I sent her some flowers.

A	B	C
The President The man He Then he	gave also asked granted assured told	him his problems. him of all possible help. him a patient hearing. him a few questions. the poor man an interview.

Structure–9

***There* + Verb + Subject**

There is a book on the table
There lived a hermit in the forest

প– র্বে যে আটটি structure এর সঙ্গে আমরা পরিচিত হয়েছি তার প্রত্যেকটি Subject দিয়ে শুর" হয়েছে এবং তার পরে Verb বসেছে। এ থেকে বলা যায় যে, ইংরেজি বাক্যের স্বাভাবিক গঠন হলো : Subject + Verb এবং verb অনুযায়ী complement অথবা object। কিন্তু structure 9 ব্যতিক্রম। এই structure-টিতে *There*-এর কোন অর্থ নেই। এর পরে বসে Verb এবং Verb-এর পরে আসল Subject বসে। Verb-টি Subject-এর সঙ্গে agree করে, *there* এর সঙ্গে নয়। উদাহরণ দিলে ব্যাপারটি পরিষ্কার হবে।

1. There is a pen on the table.
2. There are books on the shelf.

A	B	C
There Karim He Then he	was knocked hurried must inform went were pushed	the door twice. in the room. signs of violence in the drawing-room. no one around the house. the police. the door open. no time to lose. blood on the carpet. out of the room. no response.

Answer Section

holycrossrajshahi.com

Structure-1

(a) A tall man was walking along a country road. He came to a bend. He stopped there suddenly. A big snake was lying across the road. The man got scared. The stick dropped from his hand. It ran away.

(b) Kamal lives in a hall of residence. He gets up at seven o'clock. He exercises vigorously for half an hour. He breakfasts heartily at eight o'clock. He goes to class at half-past eight. He reads in the library in the afternoon. He works very hard.

Structure-2

(a) Kamal was late for his class. Professor Huq looked angry with him. The professor stood speechless. Then his manner grew unpleasant. His voice became strident. Kamal was surprised at this reaction. However, he was ready to apologize. But he was unable to speak. He became dumbfounded.

(b) Wordsworth was delighted to see the daffodils. The daffodils were comparable to the stars. They seemed full of joy. Wordsworth stood spellbound. But the pleasure was not simply momentary.

Structure-3

(a) Mr Ali was a bright student of Law. He became a lawyer. He was an intelligent and eloquent man. So he became a successful lawyer. He remained a lawyer for fifteen years. He was appointed a judge of the Supreme Court.

(b) Siraj-ud-doula was a patriotic young man. His struggle is proof of his patriotism. Mir Jafor turned traitor at the battle of Plassey. As a result, the battles proved a disaster for Siraj-ud-doula. He must have felt for a betrayed man. He remains a tragic figure in the history.

Structure-4

Kazi Nazrul Islam was from Burdwan in West Bengal. He was of poor parents. He was deprived of formal education. He was fond of singing and acting. He was in World War I.

Structure-5

Hasan had a nice dog called Tom. He used to feed him three times a day. He would wash him with soap occasionally. One day Tom refused to eat anything. Hasan called a vet. The vet examined Tom. He asked Hasan not to worry. Tom had only a stomach-upset. The vet prescribed some medicine. Hasan thanked him profusely.

Structure-6

(a) The burglars supposed the house to be empty. They broke the door open. The owner of the house got his pistol ready. He caught them red-handed. The accused found themselves unable to defend their act in the court. The judge pronounced them guilty.

(b) Mrs Hasina found the drawing-room dirty. This made her very unhappy. She held the children responsible for the mess. They thought the accusation untrue. But argument might have driven her mad.

Structure-7

(a) Mr. A.K. Fazul Huq considered it a great honour to serve the people. He proved himself to be a courageous man. The people nicknamed him Sher-e-Bangla, the tiger of Bengal. They have always regarded him as a great national leader.

(b) The whole world considers Socrates a wise man. But some people in Athens condemned him as a bad influence upon the youth. They also denounced him as an impious man. They found him to be a dangerous person. We believe it pity to have put Socrates to death.

Structure-8

The President granted the poor man an interview. The man told him his problems. The President gave him a patient hearing. He also asked him a few questions. Then he assured him of all possible help.

Structure-9

There was no one around the house. Karim knocked the door twice. There was no response. He pushed the door open. Then he went in the room. There were signs of violence in the drawing-room. There was blood on the carpet. He hurried out of the room. There was no time to lose. He must inform the police.

Source : Learning English the Easy Way (adapted)

Practice



Make four sentences from the substitution table.

01.

Bangladesh She Rivers	is are	called a riverine country.
		also a very important factor for our existence and economy.
		also called the queen of all the countries of the world.
		nature's gifts to us.

02.

Corruption It The people	is have	increasing with the passage of time.
		to be aware of it.
		a great problem in Bangladesh.
		high time we stopped corruption.

03.

Independence We The enemy	is had to	fight nine months to achieve it.
		struggle for it.
		surrender to us at last.
		the birth right of a nation.

04.

Education It Illiteracy	helps is	one of the basic human needs.
		us to distinguish between right and wrong.
		still dominant in our country.
		the backbone of a nation.

05.

Environment Man It	is gets	great influence on human being.
		being polluted for various causes.
		the most influential

		element of it.
		man who is mainly responsible for its degradation.

06.

Computer	renders	it in every sphere of life.
Its introduction	use	a great service to us.
It	is	a modern invention.
We	has changed	our life completely.

07.

Long ago there	teased	nearby in the same jungle.
A tortoise also	was	always very proud of his fast speed.
The hare always	lived	the tortoise for his slow pace.
The hare always		a hare in a jungle.

08.

I Robinson Crusoe He The ship	was wrecked is am sailed	on the sea by a ship.
		fond of adventurous stories.
		on the way.
		my favourite book.

09.

Ibn Sina	was	Abu Ali Sina.
His full name	was born	in 985 in Bukhara, in Iran.
His reputation	spread	all places in his early age.
	is called	the prince of medical science.

10.

There		doing a lot of mischief there.
They	lived	annoyed.
The master	be	a number of mice in the house.
		an old house in a village

Answers

01. (a) Bangladesh is called a riverine country.
(b) She is also called the queen of all the countries of the world.
(c) Rivers are nature's gifts to us.
(d) Rivers are also a very important factor for our existence and economy.

02. (a) Corruption is a great problem in Bangladesh.
(b) It is increasing with the passage of time.
(c) The people have to be aware of it.
(d) It is high time we stopped corruption.

03. (a) Independence is the birth right of a nation.
(b) We had to struggle for it.
(c) We had to fight nine months to achieve it.
(d) The enemy had to surrender to us at last.

04. (a) Education is one of the basic human needs.
(b) It is the backbone of a nation.
(c) It helps us to distinguish between right and wrong.
(d) Illiteracy is still dominant in our country.

05. (a) Environment gets great influence on human being.
(b) It is being polluted for various causes.
(c) Man is the most influential element of it.
(d) It is man who is mainly responsible for its degradation.

06. (a) Computer is a modern invention.
(b) Its introduction has changed our life completely.
(c) It renders a great service to us.
(d) We use it in every sphere of life.

07. (a) Long ago there lived a hare in a jungle.
(b) A tortoise also lived nearby in the same jungle.
(c) The hare was always very proud of his fast speed.
(d) The hare always teased the tortoise for his slow pace.

08. (a) I am fond of adverturous stories.
(b) Robinson Crusoe is my favourite book.
(c) He sailed on the sea by a ship.
(d) The ship was wrecked on the way.

holycrossrajshahi.com

09. (a) Ibn Sina was born in 985 in Bukhara, in Iran.
(b) His full name was Abu Ali Sina.
(c) His reputation spread all places in his early age.
(d) Ibn Sina is called the prince of medical science.

10. (a) There was an old house in a village.
(b) There lived a number of mice in the house.
(c) They were doing a lot of mischief there.
(d) The master was annoyed.



Conditionals



নিচের Sentence দুটি লক্ষ করা যাক :

If you come late, you will miss the train. (যদি তুমি দেরিতে আস তবে তুমি ট্রেন ফেল করবে।)

Were I rich, I would set up a hospital. (আমি যদি ধনী হতাম তবে আমি একটি হাসপাতাল স্থাপন করতাম।)

উপরের Sentence দুটির প্রতিটিতে একটি করে শর্ত বা Condition প্রকাশিত হয়েছে। অর্থাৎ একটি শর্ত প– রণ হলে অন্য কাজটিও প– রণ হবে। এ কারণে উল্লিখিত Sentence দুটির প্রতিটিই **Conditional Sentence.**

অতএব, বলা যায় **যে Sentence-এ কোনো শর্ত বা Condition প্রকাশিত হয়, তাকে Conditional Sentence বলে।**

Note to remember :

Conditional Sentence-এ একটি Principal Clause এবং একটি Subordinate Clause-থাকে। Subordinate clause-এর শুর" তে "If" conjunction-টি যুক্ত থাকে। সাধারণত If যুক্ত Subordinate Clause টি Sentence-এর শুর" তে থাকলেও বাক্যের শেষ অংশেও এটি থাকতে পারে।

Kinds of conditionals :

শর্তের কাজটি ঘটার সম্ভাব্যতার উপর ভিত্তি করে Conditional Sentence কে তিন ভাগে ভাগ করা হয়েছে। যথা :

1. First Conditional Sentence Or Probable (সম্ভাব্য)
2. Second Conditional Sentence Or Improbable (অসম্ভাব্য)
3. Third Conditional Sentence Or Impossible (অসম্ভাব্য)

1. First Conditional Sentence : বর্তমানে বা ভবিষ্যতে কোনো একটি শর্ত প– রণ হলে ভবিষ্যতে একটি কাজ হবে বোঝাতে আমরা First Conditional ব্যবহার করি।

বৈশিষ্ট্য :

If clause টি present হবে ও অন্য clause টি future হবে।

গঠনপ্রণালি :

If + Subject + Verb (Present) + Subject + will + Verb.

Example:

If I **go** home, I'will inform you. (আমি যদি বাড়ি যাই তবে তোমাকে জানাবো।)

প্রথম বাক্যে If I go home এর অর্থ আমি যদি বাড়ি যাই অর্থাৎ আমার বাড়ি যাওয়ার সম্ভাবনা আছে। আবার নাও যেতে পারি।

মনে রাখবে, If Clause-কে পরে দিয়েও লেখা যায়। তবে এক্ষেত্রে মাঝে Comma (,) দিতে হয় না। যেমন :

I will inform you if I go home.

More Examples:

If you **are** late, you'**ll** miss the class. (যদি তুমি দেরি কর তবে ক্লাস মিস করবে।)

If you **read** attentively, you **will** pass. (যদি তুমি মনোযোগ দিয়ে পড় তবে তুমি পাশ করবে।)

If you **work** hard, you **will** prosper in life. (যদি তুমি কঠোর পরিশ্রম কর তবে জীবনে উন্নতি করবে।)

If you post the letter today, it'll reach there by Thursday.

If you don't hurry, you will miss the bus.

If you don't hurry, the others will go without us.

If you read attentively, you will do well in the exam.

If we go by launch, it'll be cheaper.

2. Second Conditional Sentence:

বর্তমান বা ভবিষ্যতের কোনো অবাস©ব, অসম্ভাবনীয় বা অপ্রত্যাশিত ব্যাপার বোঝাতে Second Conditional বা Improbable Conditional ব্যবহৃত হয়।

বৈশিষ্ট্য :

(i) If clause-টি Past Indefinite Tense-এ হয়।
(ii) If clause-এর verb-টি Past Tense-এ হলেও তা কোনো অতীত ঘটনাকে নির্দেশ করে না। বর্তমান (present) বা ভবিষ্যত (future) ঘটনাকে নির্দেশ করে।
(iii) Principal clause-এর Structure টি হ" ছ : would/ might + verb এর ম– ল র" প

গঠনপ্রণালি :

If + Subject + were/verb (অতীত রূপ + বাকী অংশ) + subject + would/ might + verb এর মুল রূপ + বাকী অংশ

If I had a mobile phone, I would let you use it. (আমার যদি একটি মোবাইল থাকত, তবে তোমাকে এটা ব্যবহার করতে দিতাম।)

If I **had** much money. I **would** buy a car. (আমার যদি অনেক টাকা থাকত, তবে একটি গাড়ি কিনতাম।)

প্রথম Sentence-এ If I had a mobile phone এর অর্থ 'যদি মোবাইল ফোন থাকত' অর্থাৎ আমার মোবাইল ফোন নাই এবং অতীতের কোনো ঘটনাও না। দ্বিতীয় বাক্যে If I had much money অর্থাৎ আমার প্রচুর অর্থ নাই; আমি কল্পনা করেছি মাত্র।

Examples :

(a) If I knew her name, I would tell you. (আমি যদি তার নাম জানতাম, তবে আমি তোমাকে বলতাম।)
(b) If you tried again, you would succeed. (যদি তুমি আবার চেষ্টা করতে, তবে তুমি সফল হতে।)
(c) If I were you, I would plant some trees. (আমি যদি তুমি হতাম, আমি কিছু গাছ লাগাতাম।)
(d) If a burglar came into my room, I would scream. (যদি চোর আমার র" মে আসত, তবে আমি চিৎকার করতাম।)
(e) If I were the Prime Minister, I would try to remove illiteracy. (যদি আমি প্রধানমন¿ী হতাম, তবে আমি নিরক্ষরতা দ– র করতে চেষ্টা করতাম।)
(f) I would live in the USA if I got chance. (যদি আমি সুযোগ পেতাম, তবে আমি যুক্তরাষ্ট্রে বাস করতাম।)
(g) If I were a doctor, I would treat the poor at minimum fees. (আমি যদি ডাক্তার হতাম, তবে আমি সর্বনিম্ন ফিতে গরীবদের চিকিৎসা করতাম।)
(h) If I worked in this office, I would draw a good salary. (আমি যদি এই অফিসে চাকরি করতাম,

holycrossrajshahi.com

তবে আমি ভালো বেতন পেতাম।)

Note to remember :

- ☑ যদি হওয়া বুঝায় তবে সব Person ও Number-এর পরে be verb-এর স্থানে were বসে। যেমন :
  If I were you, I would establish a college.
  If we were rich, we would help the needy people.
- ☑ নিশ্চয়তা বুঝাতে would,
- ☑ সামর্থ্য বুঝাতে could এবং
- ☑ সম্ভাবনা বুঝাতে might ব্যবহৃত হয়।

3. Third Conditional (Or Impossible Conditional Sentence) :

অতীতে একটি শর্ত প– রণ হলে পাশাপাশি অন্য কাজটি হত বা ঘটত; কিন্তু অতীতের প্রথম শর্তটি প– রণ না হওয়ায় দ্বিতীয় কাজটি সম• ন্ন হয়নি, এমন বুঝাতে Third Conditional ব্যবহার করা হয়।

বৈশিষ্ট্য :

(i) If clause টি যে কাজের কথা বলে তা অতীতকালে ঘটার কথা ছিল। অর্থাৎ শর্তটি ছিল অতীতকালের।

(ii) If clause-টির শর্ত প– রণ হয়নি বলে সেটা এখন পুনরায় প– রণ হওয়া সম্ভব নয়।

গঠনপ্রণালি :

If + Subject + had + verb (Past Participle) + Subject + would/could/ might + have + verb (Past Participle) + extension. যেমন :

If you had studied hard, you could have passed in the examination. (যদি তুমি কঠোর পরিশ্রম করতে, তবে তুমি পরীক্ষার পাশ করতে পারতে।)

If I had known that you were at home, I would have met you. (আমি যদি জানতাম তুমি বাসায় ছিলে, তবে আমি তোমার সাথে দেখা করতাম।)

Note to remember:

এ জাতীয় Sentence-এর Principal Clause-এ

- ☑ নিশ্চয়তা বুঝাতে would,
- ☑ সামর্থ্য বুঝাতে could এবং
- ☑ সম্ভাবনা বুঝাতে might ব্যবহৃত হয়।

Examples

(a) If you had come earlier, you could have bought some fish. (যদি তুমি আগে আসতে, তবে তুমি কিছু মাছ কিনতে পারতে।)

(b) If you had neglected your studies, you could have failed in the exam. (যদি তুমি পড়াশোনায় অবহেলা করতে, তবে তুমি পরীক্ষায় ফেল করতে।)

(c) If father hadn't been away, I wouldn't have missed your party. (বাবা যদি দ– রে না থাকতেন, তবে তোমার পার্টি আমি মিস করতাম না।)

(d) I would have come if mother hadn't suddenly fallen ill. (মা যদি হঠাৎ অসুস্থ না হতেন, তবে আমি আসতাম।)

(e) If we had practised speaking in English, we would have spoken better. (যদি আমরা ইংরেজি বলা অনুশীলন করতাম, তবে আমরা ভালো কথা বলতে পারতাম।)

(f) If I had done it, my uncle would have been displeased. (আমি যদি এটা করতাম, আমার চাচা অখুশী হতেন।)

(g) If I had bought a car, I would have let you use it. (আমি যদি গাড়ী কিনতাম, তবে তোমাকে এটা ব্যবহার করতে দিতাম।)

(h) If you had come late, you could/would have missed the bus. (যদি তুমি দেরিতে আসতে, তবে তুমি বাস মিস করতে।)

(i) If I hadn't come in time, I would have missed the 1st class. (আমি যদি যথাসময়ে না আসতাম, তবে আমি প্রথম ক্লাস মিস করতাম।)

(j) I would have gone out if I hadn't been so tired. (আমি যদি এতটা ক্লান্ত না হতাম, তবে আমি বাহিরে যেতাম।)

Practice

Fill in the blanks using the rules of conditionals.

01. (a) If there is cloud in the sky, —.
(b) If you phone me, —.
(c) If my mother had a lot of money, —.
(d) If you get up early in the morning, —.
(e) —, she could meet him.

02. (a) —, we can go home unwet.
(b) —, you will need visa.
(c) —, I could be her pal.
(d) —, his family would have been shocked.
(e) —, I could have played it skillfully.

03. (a) —, I would repay the loan.
(b) —, they will also behave similarly to you.
(c) —, she could have acted on movies.
(d) —, I would go to school.
(e) —, Spring can not be far behind.

04. (a) —, you will know his hiding place.
(b) If mother went to Ekushey Book Fair, —.
(c) —, I would have responded promptly.
(d) Had I been Hatem Tai, —.
(e) —, he would help you in all respects.

05. (a) —, I will phone you.
(b) — if there is no accident.
(c) —, they would utilize it properly.
(d) If you lived in Germany, —.
(e) — I would have been given a computer by parents

06. (a) —, we can make them skilled workers
(b) If I had got a scholarship —.
(c) If the number of vehicles keeps increasing, there will be no —.
(d) If a student is devoted to his studies, —.
(e) —, manage money.

07. (a) —, you had better see a doctor.
(b) If we leave our work for tomorrow —.
(c) —, we cannot face this great problem.
(d) If the rainfall is timely, —.
(e) —, we have to read more and more books.

08. (a) If he had utilized his time properly —.
(b) If I reached late, —.
(c) If you invited me, —.
(d) If it rains today, we will not go out, —?
(e) If anybody wants to be a good student —.

09. (a) If we make the best use of time, —.
(b) If you are not loved, it is a good evidence that

holycrossrajshahi.com

—.
(c) If I had a lot of money —.
(d) —, the development of the country will be accelerated.
(e) If we learn English —.

10.(a) If the rich help the poor, —.
(b) If we do our duty to our country —.
(c) If you came, —.
(d) If I had seen him before, I —.
(e) If you search his pocket, —.

Answers

01. (a) If there is cloud in the sky, I will not go outside today.
(b) If you phone me, I will come.
(c) If my mother had a lot of money, she would buy a piece of land.
(d) If you get up early in the morning, you will be able to start your work early.
(e) If he stayed a bit longer, she could meet him.

02. (a) If we bring umbrella with us, we can go home unwet.
(b) If you want to go abroad, you will need visa.
(c) If I invested some money, I could be her pal.
(d) If he had disclosed the reality, his family would have been shocked.
(e) If I had taken time, I could have played it skillfully.

03. (a) If I sold the land, I would repay the loan.
(b) If you behave properly with them, they will also behave similarly to you.
(c) If she had been given chance, she could have acted on movies.
(d) If I got the bus, I would go to school.
(e) If winter comes, spring can not be far behind.

04. (a) If you try, you will know his hiding place.
(b) If mother went to Ekushey Book Fair, I would tell her to buy some books for me.
(c) If he had called me, I would have responded promptly.
(d) Had I been Hatem Tai, I would have helped people.
(e) If you informed him, he would help you in all respects.

05. (a) If I get time, I will phone you.
(b) People will not be there if there is no accident.
(c) If they were trained well, they would utilize it properly.
(d) If you lived in Germany, you would know the pros and cons of German culture.
(e) If I had done well in the examination, I would have been given a computer by parents.

06. (a) If we educate people, we can make them skilled workers.
(b) If I had got a scholarship, I would have gone abroad to study.
(c) If the number of vehicles keeps increasing, there will be no solution of traffic jam.
(d) If a student is devoted to his studies, he will surely attain success.
(e) If you want to get the chance, manage money.

07. (a) If you want good advice, you had better see a doctor.
(b) If we leave our work for tomorrow, it will never be done again.
(c) If our people are unaware, we cannot face this great problem.
(d) If the rainfall is timely, we get a good harvest.
(e) If we want to gather knowledge, we have to read more and more books.

08. (a) If he had utilized his time properly, he would have certainly passed the examination.
(b) If I reached late, the teacher would definitely take me to task.
(c) If you invited me, I would come.
(d) If it rains today, we will not go out.
(e) If anybody wants to be a good student, he/she must study hard.

09. (a) If we make the best use of time, we are sure to succeed in life.
(b) If you are not loved, it is a good evidence that you do not love others.
(c) If I had a lot of money, I would set up a school for the adults.
(d) If unemployment problem is solved, the development of the country will be accelerated.
(e) If we learn English, we will be able to get a good job.

10. (a) If the rich help the poor, the poor will be happy.
(b) If we do our duty to our country, it will be developed.
(c) If you came, I would go.
(d) If I had seen him before, I would have told him the matter.
(e) If you search his pocket, you will get the stolen watch.

holycrossrajshahi.com

The dog (subj) has killed (verb) the rat. (object)

উপরের বাক্যটিতে দেখা যাে ছ dog শব্দটি বাক্যের Subject এবং এটা ইঁদুরটিকে মারার কাজটি করেছে। অর্থাৎ dog হলো doer of the action। আবার, rat শব্দটি বাক্যে object এবং এটার উপর কাজটি করা হয়েছে। অর্থাৎ এটা receiver (গ্রহণকারী) of the action.

কিন্তু সব সময় আমরা এভাবে বাক্য গঠন করি না। মাঝে মাঝে doer কে বাক্যের subject না করে receiver কে subject করা হয়। আর এভাবে উপরের বাক্যটিকে বললে বাক্যটি হতো :

The cat has been killed by the dog.

এখন দেখা যাে ছ এ পরিবর্তনের ফলে বাক্যের অর্থগত পরিবর্তন হয়নি। শুধুমাত্র structure (গঠন) পরিবর্তন হয়েছে। আর সে পরিবর্তনগুলো হলো :

(i) receiver টি subject হয়েছে
(ii) সাহায্যকারী verb এর পর অতিরিক্ত একটি 'be' verb বসানো হয়েছে।
(iii) ম– ল verb টির past participle করা হয়েছে
(iv) by যোগে doer টি বসানো হয়েছে।

এভাবে আমরা বলতে পারি, doer যখন Sentence এর Subject থাকে তখন তাকে Active Voice বলে। এবং Receiver যখন Sentence এর Subject হয় তখন তাকে Passive Voice বলে।

Rule–1 :

Receiver + সাহায্যকারী verb (যদি থাকে) + অতিরিক্ত be verb + ম– ল verb এর past participle + বাকী অংশ + by যোগে doer.

নিম্নের উদাহরণগুলো দেখ



The dog killed a rat. A rat was killed by the dog.
He sells tea. Tea is sold by him.

Rule–2 : Person ব্যবহারের নিয়ম:

pronoun-এর subject ও object form ভিন্ন। তাই pronoun এর subject ও object form শিখতে হবে। নিচের ছকটি লক্ষ কর।

person		*subject*	*object*
First	singular	I	me
	plural	we	us
Second	singular	you	you
	plural	you	you
Third	singular	he/ she/it	him/ her/it
	plural	they	them

Example: I gave *him* a pen.
He was given a pen by **me**.

সাহায্যকারী verb গুলো হল:

Principal auxiliary:
am, is, are, was, were, have, has, had (বাক্যে 'আছে' বা 'ছিল' অর্থে যখন ব্যবহৃত হয় তখন এগুলো ম– ল verb)
do, does, did (না বোধক বা প্রশ্নম– লক বাক্য গঠনে ব্যবহৃত হলে)

Modal auxiliary :
can, could, may, might, must, shall, should, will, would, had to, ought to, is going to

Semi-modals: need, dare, used

Rule–3 : অতিরি□ be verb-এর ব□হার :

অতিরি□ be verb-টি বসাবার সবচেয়ে সহজ উপায় :

(a) প্রদত্ত বাক্যে যদি to, going to; এবং modal auxiliary থাকে তবে অতিরিক্ত be verb-টি অপরিবর্তিত বসে
(b) প্রদত্ত বাক্যে যদি be verb (be, been, am, is, are, was, were) থাকে তবে অতিরিক্ত be verb-টি being হবে
(c) প্রদত্ত বাক্যে যদি have, has, had থাকে তবে অতিরিক্ত be verb-টি been হবে
(d) কোনো সাহায্যকারী verb না থেকে যদি ম– ল verb-টি present হয় অতিরিক্ত be verb-টি am/is/are হবে এবং ম– ল verb-টি যদি past হয় তবে অতিরিক্ত be verb-টি was/ were হবে।

Active	**Passive**
They **write** a letter.	A letter **is written** by them.
এখানে ম– ল verb write এবং verb টি যেহেতু present form এ আছে তাই অতিরিক্ত be verb-টি present form গ্রহণ করে is হয়েছে। [Rule 3(d)]	
They **are** writing a letter.	A letter is **being written** by them.
এখানে are থাকায় অতিরিক্ত be verb-টি being হয়েছে। [R-3(b)]	
They **have** written a letter.	A letter has **been written** by them.
এখানে have থাকায় অতিরিক্ত be verb-টি been হয়েছে। [R-3(c)]	
They have **been** writing a letter.	A letter has been **being written** by them.
এখানে been থাকায় অতিরিক্ত be verb-টি being হয়েছে। [R-3(b)]	
They **wrote** a letter.	A letter **was written** by them.
এখানে ম– ল verb wrote এবং verb টি যেহেতু past form এ আছে তাই অতিরিক্ত be verb-টি was হয়েছে। [R-3(d)]	
They **should** write a letter.	A letter should **be written** by them.
এখানে should থাকায় অতিরিক্ত be verb-টি be হয়েছে। [R-3(a)]	
They are **going to** write a letter.	A letter is going to **be written** by them.
এখানে going to থাকায় অতিরিক্ত be verb-টি be হয়েছে। [R-3(a)]	

Practice

A. Choose the correct form of the verb to fill in

holycrossrajshahi.com

the blanks.

1. **My jacket —.**
   (a) has washed
   (b) has been washed
2. **My sister — my jacket.**
   (a) has washed
   (b) has been washed
3. **The tree ___.**
   (a) is felling
   (b) is being felled
4. **The room ___.**
   (a) locked
   (b) was locked
5. **Rina ___.**
   (a) invited
   (b) was invited
6. **The work ___.**
   (a) will do
   (b) will be done
7. **The painter ___.**
   (a) was painting.
   (b) was being painted
8. **She ___ chocolates.**
   (a) love
   (b) loves
   (c) is loved
9. **The books ___.**
   (a) was torn
   (b) tore
   (c) were torn
10. **This exercise ___.**
    (a) must do
    (b) do
    (c) must be done

B. Use appropriate 'be' verb in the blanks.

1. The cat chased the mouse.
   The mouse — chased by the cat.
2. Marry hit the ball.
   The ball — hit by Marry.
3. A powerful engine pulled the train.
   The train — pulled by a powerful engine.
4. We should take measures to prevent water pollution.
   Measures should — taken to prevent water pollution by us.
5. Traders open fresh account book.
   Fresh account — opened by traders.
6. They could also see a young boy of about their own age.
   A young boy of about their own age could ___ seen by them.
7. The angel was writing the names of the persons.
   The names of the persons were — written by the angel.
8. The woman was holding a baby in her arms.
   A baby was — held the woman in her arms.
9. I could tell them all.
   They could — told all by me.
10. The Headmaster asked me my name.
    I — asked my name by the Headmaster.

C. Use appropriate 'verb with be' in the blanks.

1. She wore a nice dress.
   A nice dress ___ by her.
2. Fortune favours the brave.
   The brave ___ favoured by fortune.
3. I am going to open a bank account.
   A bank account ___ opened by me.
4. I shall do everything.
   Everything ___ by me.
5. I saw him go.
   He ___ to go by me.
6. He looks after the orphan.
   The orphan ___ by him.
7. The storm has uprooted a lot of trees.
   A lot of trees ___ uprooted by the storm.
8. I know him.
   He ___ to me.
9. They are going to dig a canal.
   A canal ___ by them.
10. He did many things for me.
    Many things ___ for me by him.
11. He has lost his book.
    His book ___ by him.
12. Everyone shall blame us.
    We ___ by everyone.
13. Moni has to do the work.
    The work ___ by Moni.

Answer

A. 1. (b) has been washed 2. (a) has washed 3. (b) is being felled 4. (b) was locked 5. (b) was invited 6. (b) will be done 7. (a) was painting. 8. (b) loves 9. (c) were torn 10. (c) must be done

B. 1. was 2. was 3. was 4. be 5. is 6. be 7. being 8. being 9. be 10. was

C. 1. was worn 2. are 3. is going to be 4. will be done 5. was seen 6. are looked after 7. have been 8. is known 9. is going to be dug 10. were done 11. has been lost 12. will be blamed 13. has to be done

Rule–4 : <u>Receiver/ Object চেনার উপায়:</u>

ম– ল verb-এর পরের noun/pronoun হল Object। verb-কে 'কাকে/কি/ কারা' দিয়ে প্রশ্ন করলে Object পাওয়া যায়। তবে ম– ল verb এর পরে যদি participle (ing যুক্ত/ ed যুক্ত) বা infinitive (to+verb) বা preposition (বিশেষ করে of) যুক্ত কোনো অংশ থাকে তখন পুরো অংশটাই subject হিসেবে ব্যবহার করতে হবে।

ing যু□:

Active : He knows a boy **reading at Dhaka University**.

Passive : A boy reading at Dhaka University is known to him.

ed যু□:

Active : I bought a shirt **made in China**.

Passive : A shirt made in China was bought by me.

Preposition যু□:

They entertained the guests **of the bridal party** heartily.

The guests of the bridal party were entertained heartily by them.

Rule–5 : Extension (modifier of verb) চেনার উপায়:
verb-এর কাজ কোথায়/ কখন/ কীভাবে/ কেন হল ---- এমন তথ্য প্রকাশক শব্দ বা শব্দসমষ্টি হলো extension।
Active: I found a man **in the field**.
Passive: A man was found in the field by me.
Active: We make fire **to cook food**.
Passive: Fire is made to cook food by us.

Rule–6 : একটি বাক্যে দুটো object of verb থাকলে:-

(a) Indirect object (অর্থাৎ প্রাণী/ব্যক্তি বাচক) কে subject করা শ্রেয়।
Active: I gave him a book
Passive: He was given a book by me.

(b) অন্য object টিও subject হতে পারে, তবে এক্ষেত্রে direct object এর প– র্বে অর্থানুসারে অতিরিক্ত to/for বসাতে হবে।
Active: I gave him a book.
Passive: A book was given to him by me.
Active: I bought him a book
Passive: A book was bought for him by me.

Example

1. The old man wants money.
Ans: Money is wanted by the old man.
2. The young writer entertained the lady admirer.
Ans: The lady admirer was entertained by the young writer.
3. The lady guest took the writer to task. **Ans:** The writer was taken to task by the lady guest.
4. They were digging a canal. **Ans:** A canal was being dug by them.
He will have done the work. **Ans:** The work will have been done by him.

একমাত্র Transitive Verb অর্থাৎ যার Object থাকে তাকেই Passive Voice করা যায়। Intransitive verb এর passive voice হয় না।
Active : It happened yesterday. ☠
Passive : ~~It was happened yesterday.~~
Active : The man died yesterday. ☠
Passive : ~~The man was died yesterday.~~



Rule–7 : Active Voice এ দ্বিতীয় verb-টির প– র্বে যদি to না থাকে তবে passive করার সময় to টি লিখতে হবে। (active voice এর ক্ষেত্রে সাধারণত: need, bid, dare, make, hear, feel, know, behold, watch প্রভৃতি verb এর পরবর্তী verb টির প– র্বে to উহ্য থাকে)

Active : He made me **go**. (এখানে ২য় verb হলো go এবং এর প– র্বে কোনো to নেই। কিন্তু passive করার সময় অবশ্যই to টি লিখতে হবে।)
Passive : I was made **to go** by him.

উল্লেখ্য: 'let' verb এর পরবর্তী verb এর প– র্বে কোনো সময় to বসে না।
Active: He **let** me **do** the work.
Passive: I was **let do** the work by him.

Rule–8 : Reflexive object এর ক্ষেত্রে doer কে object বা receiver কে subject করার প্রয়োজন নেই। (self/selves যুক্ত pronoun কে reflexive pronoun বলে। myself, themselves)
Active: He killed **himself**.
Passive: He was killed by **himself**.

Rule–9 : কিছু কিছু verb আছে যাদের পর by না বসে অন্য preposition বসে। মনে রাখবে, agent এর প– র্বে by এবং instrument এর প– র্বে with বসে।
known to, pleased with (person), pleased at (thing), annoyed with (person), annoyed at (thing), shocked at, surprised at, seized with, relieved of, made up of, filled with, vexed at, satisfied at (thing), satisfied with (person), filled with, stunned at, contained in, interested in/with.

✍ যে ব্যক্তি/ প্রাণী/ প্রাকৃতিক শক্তি কাজ করে তাকে agent বলে।
✍ যার সাহায্যে কাজ করা হয় তাকে instrument বলে।

The room was decorated by $\frac{\text{me}}{\text{agent}}$ with $\frac{\text{flowers}}{\text{instrument}}$.

Interrogative Sentence

Rule-10

Interrogative sentence-কে passive করার সময় প্রথমে assertive-এ রূপান্ত®র করে নিতে হবে। এর পরে ঐ রূপান্ত®রিত assertive sentence-কে passive করতে হবে। সর্বশেষে, প্রথম auxiliary verb-কে subject এর প– র্বে লিখতে হবে।
Active: Have you eaten rice?
(Active Assertive: You have eaten rice.)
(Passive Assertive: Rice has been eaten by you.)
Passive: Has rice been eaten by you?

NB: উপর্যুক্ত ব্রাকেটের বাক্য দুটিকে উত্তরপত্রে লেখা যাবে না। প্রয়োজনবোধে খসড়া করে নিতে হবে। আরও কিছু উদাহরণ লক্ষ কর:

Example 1:
Active: Does he play football?
(Active Assertive: He plays football.)
(Passive Assertive: Football is played by him.)
Passive: Is football played by him?

Example 2:
Active: Did he play football?
(Active Assertive: He played football.)
(Passive Assertive: Football was played by him.)
Passive: Was football played by him?

Active-এ do/ does/ did থাকলে তা বাদ যাবে। did থাকলে verb-টি past হবে এবং do/ does থাকলে Present হবে।

মনে রাখবে, whom থাকলে who হবে এবং who থাকলে by whom হবে ।

Example 1:
Active: Whom did you want now?
(Active Assertive: You wanted **whom** now.)

Passive: **Who** were wanted now by you?
Example 2:
Active: What are they reading in the morning?
(Active Assertive: They are reading **what** in the morning.)
Passive: **What** is being read in the morning by them?
Example 3:
Active: How many boys has he rebuked in the class?
(Active Assertive: He has rebuked **how many boys** in the class.)
Passive: **How many boys** have been rebuked in the class by him?
Example 1:
Active: Who is calling you?
(Passive: You **are** being called **by whom**.)
Passive: **By whom are** you being called?
Example 2:
Active: What pains me?
(Passive: I **am** pained **by what**.)
Passive: **By what am** I pained?
Example 3 :
Active: How many people have asked you?
(Passive: You **have** been asked **by how many people**.)
Passive : **By how many people have** you been asked?

Imperative Sentence

Rule-11

Rule-1 : যে সকল Imperative Sentence 'verb' দ্বারা শুর“ হয় তাদের Passive Voice এর গঠন নিম্নরূপ :

(i) Let + object/receiver + be + V_3 (Past Participle) + Ext.
(ii) Let + not + object + be + V_3 + Ext.

Examples :
i) Open the door.
Passive : Let the door be opened.
ii) Write the letter without delay.
Passive : Let the letter be written without delay.
iii) Take pity on him.
Passive : Let him be taken pity on.
iv) Do not break it.
Passive : Let it not be broken.

Rule-2 : যে সকল Imperative Sentence 'Let' দ্বারা শুর“ হয় তাদের গঠন নিম্নরূপ :

i) Let + object + be + V_3 [একটি object থাকলে]
ii) Let + ২য় obj. + be + V_3 + by + ১ম obj. [দুটি object হলে]

Examples :
i) Let him go.
Passive : Let him be gone.
ii) Let $\frac{\text{me}}{0_1}$ do $\frac{\text{it}}{0_2}$
Passive : Let it be done by me.

Rule-3 : Always, Never, Please, Kindly, Just ইত্যাদি Adverbial দ্বারা শুর“ হওয়া Sentence এর Passive Voice :

1) Always speak the truth.
P/V : Let the truth be always spoken.
2) Never tell a lie.
P/V : Let a lie be never told.
3) Please help me.
P/V : Let me be helped please.
4) Just do it.
P/V : Let it be just done.

Rule-4 : Pluck (ফুল বা কিছু তোলা), bring, buy ইত্যাদি verb এর ক্ষেত্রে by এর পরিবর্তে for বসে।

i) Pluck me a flower.
P/V : Let a flower be plucked for me.
ii) Bring/Buy him a shirt.
P/V : Let a shirt be brought/bought for him.
এক্ষেত্রে, Passive এর গঠন :
Let + ২য় obj + be + V_3 + for + ১ম obj.

Some special structures :

Rule-12

Quasi passive:
Quasi passive (taste, feel, smell, sound-এ জাতীয় verb থাকে) বাক্যের ক্ষেত্রে শুধুমাত্র ম– ল verb-টির 3rd form এবং এর প– র্বে একটি be verb বসবে।
Active: Green mangoes taste sour.
Passive: Green mangoes **are tasted** sour.
অথবা, প্রদত্ত অংশের verb-টির পরিবর্তে be verb বসবে এবং when/ if যুক্ত একটি অতিরিক্ত clause বসবে।
Active: Green mangoes taste sour.
Passive: Green mangoes **are** sour when/ if (they are) tasted.

Rule-13

Complex/ compound sentence-এর ক্ষেত্রে উভয় clause-এর voice change করতে হবে। তবে কোনো অংশের verb যদি intransitive হয় তবে ঐ অংশের voice change করতে হবে না।
Active: He ate rice and I drank coffee.
Passive: Rice was eaten by him and coffee was drunk by me.
Active: He ate rice and (he) drank coffee.
Passive: Rice was eaten ~~(by him)~~ and coffee was drunk by him. (এখানে উভয় অংশের subject/ doer একই হওয়ায় শুধুমাত্র ২য় অংশে + by যোগে doer-টি Object হিসাবে লেখা হয়েছে।)

Practice

01. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.
(a) My watch has been stolen.
(b) Love the children.
(c) The cat killed the mouse.
(d) Let him sing a folk song.
(e) My pen has been lost.

02. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.
(a) The cup contains tea.
(b) You are requested not to smoke.
(c) She fans herself.
(d) He looks after the orphan.
(e) Change the voice.

03. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.
(a) I have lost my pen.
(b) Let me say a few words.
(c) Did they make a noise?
(d) Do away with it.

(e) The teacher made me do the sum.

04. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.
(a) Who has broken the glass?
(b) Rome was not built in a day.
(c) Mr Rahman teaches us English.
(d) Pluck me a flower.
(e) Honey tastes sweet.

05. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.
(a) Floods destroyed many houses.
(b) They are going to open halkhata.
(c) Tell him to go.
(d) Pluck me the flower.
(e) He was elected Premier.

06. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.
(a) They spent a wondeful time in the school.
(b) Our life is not measured by months or years.
(c) During his lifetime, he spent money lavishly to help the poor.
(d) We should follow the life of the bee.
(e) All consider him the best player of Bangladesh.

07. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.
(a) Tourists and visitors from home and aboard visit this beach.
(b) They are highly delighted at the natural beauty of this place.
(c) People of all ages enjoy the game.
(d) The problem can not be solved overnight.
(e) Environment is polluted by it.

08. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.
(a) An angry man is disliked by everybody.
(b) The Headmaster read out the report.
(c) The prizes were given away by the president.
(d) Any answer in the examination should not be elaborated.
(e) He should read through the question paper carefully.

09. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.
(a) Only a wicked person uses it for evil purpose.
(b) Proper steps should be taken to improve their condition.
(c) It was not invented overnight.
(d) A corrupt person is disliked.
(e) So we should control it for our own sake.

10. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.
(a) I passed the day with my new classmates and teachers.
(b) He loves his relatives.
(c) Who gave you this pen?
(d) I gladly accepted the invitation.
(e) It is spoken all over the world.

Answer

01. (a) Somebody has stolen my watch.
(b) Let the children be loved.
(c) The mouse was killed by the cat.
(d) Let a folk song be sung by him.
(e) I have lost my pen.

02. (a) Tea is contained in the cup.
(b) Do not smoke.
(c) She is fanned by herself.
(d) The orphan are looked after by him.
(e) Let the voice be changed.

03. (a) My pen has been lost.
(b) Let a few words be said by me.
(c) Was a noise made by them?
(d) Let it be done away with.
(e) I was made to do the sum by the teacher.

04. (a) By whom has the glass been broken?
(b) The Romans did not build Rome in a day.
(c) We are taught English by Mr. Rahman/ English is taught us by Mr. Rahman.
(d) Let a flower be plucked for me.
(e) Honey is tasted sweet./ Honey is sweet when it is tasted.

05. (a) Many houses were destroyed by floods.
(b) Halkhata is going to be opened by them.
(c) Let him be told to go.
(d) Let the flower be plucked for me.
(e) We/ People elected him Premier.

06. (a) A wonderful time was spent by them in the school.
(b) Months or years do not measure our life.
(c) During his lifetime, money was spent lavishly by him to help the poor.
(d) The life of the bee should be followed by us.
(e) He is considered the best player of Bangladesh (by all).

07. (a) This beach is visited by tourists and visitors from home and abroad.
(b) The natural beauty of this place highly delights them.
(c) The game is enjoyed by people of all ages.
(d) No one can solve the problem overnight.
(e) It pollutes environment.

08. (a) Everybody dislikes an angry man.
(b) The report was read out by the Headmaster.
(c) The President gave away the prizes.
(d) The examinees should not elaborate any answer.
(e) The question paper should be read through carefully by him.

09. (a) It is used for evil purpose by only a wicked person.
(b) The government/ We should take proper steps to improve their condition.
(c) Nobody invented it overnight.
(d) All dislike a corrupt person.
(e) So it should be controlled by us for our own sake.

10. (a) The day was passed by me with my new classmates and teachers.
(b) His relatives are loved by him.
(c) By whom was this pen given to you?/ By whom were you given this pen?
(d) The invitation was accepted gladly by me.
(e) People all over the world speak it.

Transformation 21

Degree

Degree/Comparison of Adjective :

নিচের Chart টি মনে রাখলে Degree পুরোপুরি আয়ত্বে চলে আসবে :

Positive	Comparative	Superlative
1. শুধু as...as/ so...as যুক্ত	Comparative + than or, less/no than + positive	
2. No other + ... + as...as/so...as যুক্ত	(i) comparative + than any other (ii) comparative + than all other	(i) the + superlative (ii) the + sup + of all + ...
3. Very few + ... + as...as/so...as যুক্ত	comp. + than most other or, comp. + than few other	one of the + sup.

Positive হতে Comparative ও Superlative

Rule-1 : শুধু as...as/so...as যুক্ত Positive কে Comparative :

প্রথমে উদাহরণগুলো লক্ষ কর :

i) He is as tall as Kamal.
Com : Kamal is not taller than he.
or, He is not less tall than Kamal.
ii) A lion is not so strong as a tiger.
Com : A tiger is stronger than a lion.
or, A lion is less strong than a tiger.

১ম পদ্ধতি	২য় পদ্ধতি
i) obj. টি sub. হবে	i) sub ও Be/Auxiliary বহাল থাকবে
ii) Be/Auxialiary বসবে	ii) no less/less বসবে
iii) not বসবে/উঠবে	iii) Positive form বহাল থাকবে + than বসবে
iv) Comparative + than হবে	(iv) obj. বহাল থাকবে
v) sub. টি obj. হবে	

Rule-2 : No other + ... + as...as/so...as যুক্ত Positive কে Comparative ও Superlative :

প্রথমে উদাহরণগুলো দেখ :

i) No other city in Bangladesh is as big as Dhaka.
Com : Dhaka is bigger than any other city in Bangladesh.
Sup : Dhaka is the biggest city in Bangladesh.

Comparative করার নিয়ম :

i) Sentence এর শেষ হতে Subject নিতে হয়।
ii) Auxiliary বসে।
iii) As + Adj. + as এর স্থলে Comparative form বসে।
iv) No other এর পরিবর্তে than any other বসে।
v) বাকী অংশ বসে।

Superlative করার নিয়ম :

i) Sentence এর শেষ হতে Subject নিতে হয়।
ii) Auxiliary/Be বসে।
iii) As + Adj. + as এর পরিবর্তে the + superlative form বসে।
iv) No other বাদ যায়।
v) বাকী অংশ বসে।

Rule-3 : Very few + ... + as...as/so...as যুক্ত Positive কে Comparative ও Superlative :

প্রথমে উদাহরণগুলো দেখ :

Very few boys in the class are as tall as Kamal.
Com : Kamal is taller than most other boys in the class.
Sup : Kamal is one of the tallest boys in the class.

Comparative করার নিয়ম :

i) Sentence এর শেষ হতে Subject নিতে হয়।
ii) Auxiliary/Be বসে।
iii) As + Adj. + as এর পরিবর্তে Comparative form বসে।
iv) Very few এর পরিবর্তে than most other/ than few other বসে।
v) বাকী অংশ বসে।

Superlative করার নিয়ম :

i) Sentence এর শেষ হতে Subject নিতে হয়।
ii) Be/Auxiliary বসে।
iii) As + Adj. + as এর পরিবর্তে One of the + superlative form বসে।
iv) Very few বাদ যায়।
v) বাকী অংশ বসে।

Rule-1, Rule-2 ও Rule-3 ভালোভাবে বুঝে নিলে যেকোন Degree অন্য Degree তে রূপান্তরিত করা যায়।

Sentence

Affirmative ⇆ Negative

সাধারণত auxiliary verb এর সাথে not যোগ করে কোনো বাক্যকে negative করতে হয়। তবে auxiliary verb না থাকলে ম– ল verb এর প– র্বে do not/does not/did not বসিয়ে Negative করতে হয়। যেমন :

Affirmative : Della was the best wife. (Make it negative)

Negative : Della was not the best wife.

এভাবে পরিবর্তন করায় বাক্য দুটির অর্থ পরিবর্তিত হয়ে গিয়েছে। তাই Transformation of sentence এর ক্ষেত্রে একটু ভিন্নভাবে পরিবর্তন করতে হয়। কারণ Transformation এর ব্যাপারটি হলো, অর্থ ঠিক রেখে শুধু Structure পরিবর্তন করা। এক্ষেত্রে আমরা তিনটি নিয়ম অনুসরণ করি।

(i) নির্দিষ্ট Phrase পরিবর্তন
(ii) antonym + প্রশ্নানুযায়ী negative/affirmative
(iii) interrogative + প্রশ্নানুযায়ী negative/affirmative

(i) নির্দি□ Phrase পরিবর্তন

	Negative	*Affirmative*
1	**None but** (ব্যক্তি) **nothing but** (বস্তু)/ **not more less than** (সংখ্যা/ পরিমাণ) **nowhere but** (স্থান) **Ex :** Nothing but consideration can bring peace.	**Only / alone** **Ex :** Only consideration can bring peace.

	Negative	Affirmative
2	**Cannot help + ing / cannot but + base form** **Ex :** She cannot help crying hearing the news. Or, She cannot but cry hearing the news.	**Must / have to + verb এর মূল form** **Ex :** She must cry hearing the news.
3	**Could not help + V^{ing}/ could not but + base form** **Ex :** She could not but laugh.	**had to + verb** এর ম– ল **form** **Ex :** She had to laugh.
4	**Not only ---------- but also** **Ex :** He eats not only meat but also fish.	**Both -------- and/ besides** **Ex :** He eats both meat and fish. / He eats meat besides fish.
5	**There is / was no + noun + without** **Ex :** There is no girl without a soft heart.	**Every/ all + noun + have / has / had** **Ex :** Every girl has a soft heart.
6	**There is no noun + but / who / which + verb** **Ex :** There is no teacher but wishes good for the students.	**Every/ all + noun + other verbs** **Ex :** Every teacher wishes good for the students.

Negative : *None but* God can help us.
Affirmative : *Only* God can help us.
Negative : I *cannot but* go there.
Affirmative : I *must/have to* go there.
Negative : I *could not but* go there.
Affirmative : I *had to* go there.
Negative : *Not only* Rahim *but also* Karim came here.
Affirmative : *Both* Rahim *and* Karim came here.
Affirmative : *Besides* Rahim, Karim came here.
Negative : The lady *not only* ate mutton chop *but also* drank coffee.
Affirmative : The lady ate mutton chop *besides* drinking coffee.
Negative : There is no girl *without* the sense of motherhood.
Affirmative : *Every* girl *has* the sense of motherhood.
Negative : *There is no* mother *but* loves her child.
Affirmative : *Every* mother loves her child.

(ii) Antonym + negative/affirmative

যেসব sentence এর কোনো শব্দের antonym ব্যবহার করা যায় সেক্ষেত্রে প্রশ্নানুযায়ী negative বা affirmative করে antonym ব্যবহার করতে হবে। যেমন :

He is honest. (Negative)
He is not dishonest.

কিছু বিপরীতার্থক শব্দের নমুনা

Word	Antonym
a few (কিছু)	many (অনেক)
a little (সামান্য)	much (অনেক)
absent (অনুপস্থিত)	present (উপস্থিত)
active (সক্রিয়)	inactive (নিষ্ক্রিয়)
agreed (সম্মত)	disagreed (অসম্মত)
all (affirmative) (সবই)	No (কেউ না)
all (negative) (সবই না)	some (কিছু)
always (affir) (সব সময়)	never (কখনো না)
always (negative) (সব সময় না)	sometimes (মাঝে মাঝে)
comfortable (স্বস্তিকর)	uncomfortable (অস্বস্তিকর)
doubtful (সন্দেহময়)	undoubtful / sure (সন্দেহমুক্ত)
formal (আনুষ্ঠানিক)	informal (অনানুষ্ঠানিক)
friend (বন্ধু), Pal (বন্ধু)	foe (শত্রু")
good (ভাল)	bad (মন্দ)
grateful (কৃতজ্ঞ)	ungrateful (অকৃতজ্ঞ)
happy (সুখী)	unhappy (অসুখী)
hard (কঠিন)	easy (সহজ)
healthy (স্বাস্থ্যকর)	unhealthy (অস্বাস্থ্যকর)
honest (সৎ)	dishonest (অসৎ)
honesty (সততা)	dishonesty (অসততা)
honour (সম্মান)	dishonour (অসম্মান)
literate (শিক্ষিত)	illiterate (অশিক্ষিত)
love (ভালোবাসা)	hate (ঘৃণা করা)
moral (নৈতিক)	immoral (অনৈতিক)
mortal (মরণশীল)	immortal (অমরণশীল)
obedient (বাধ্যগত)	disobedient (অবাধ্যগত)
obey (মান্য করা)	disobey (অমান্য করা)
ordinary (সাধারণ)	extraordinary (অসাধারণ)
patriot (দেশপ্রেমিক)	traitor (দেশদ্রোহী)
pious (ধার্মিক)	impious (অধার্মিক)
pleasant (প্রীতিকর)	unpleasant (অপ্রীতিকর)
pleased (সন্তুষ্ট)	displeased (অসন্তুষ্ট)
possible (সম্ভব)	impossible (অসম্ভব)
punctual (সময়নিষ্ঠ)	late (দেরি)
real (প্রকৃত)	unreal (অপ্রকৃত)
regular (নিয়মিত)	irregular (অনিয়মিত)
remember (স্মরণ করা)	forget (ভুলে যাওয়া)
responsible (দায়িত্বশীল)	irresponsible (দায়িত্বহীন)
rich (ধনী)	poor (গরীব)
right (সঠিক)	wrong (ভুল)
sincere (আন্তরিক)	insincere (আন্তরিকতাহীন)
solvent (স্ব" ছল)	insolvent (অস্ব" ছল)
very (খুব)	less (কম)
willing (ই" ছুক)	unwilling (অনি" ছুক)
wise (জ্ঞানী)	unwise (ম– র্খ)
lazy (অলস)	industrious (পরিশ্রমী)
honour (সম্মান)	dishonour (অসম্মান)

(iii) interrogative + প্রশ্নানুযায়ী negative/affirmative

Universal truth sentence/ বা যেসব sentence কোনো ভাবেই পরিবর্তন সম্ভব হ" ছ না সেক্ষেত্রে Affirmative interrogative দেয়া থাকলে তা পরিবর্তন করে Negative assertive এবং Affirmative assertive দেয়া থাকলে তা পরিবর্তন করে Negative interrogative করতে হবে।

Assertive : The earth moves round the sun.
Interrogative : Doesn't the earth move round

holycrossrajshahi.com

the sun?

Exercise

Transform the following sentences as directed.
(নির্দেশনা অনুযায়ী নিচের বাক্যগুলো পরিবর্তন কর।)

1. Tea is a popular drink (Negative).
2. His wife Catherine loves gardening (Negative).
3. Most of the drivers of our country are illiterate (Negative).
4. At first he only treated animals (Negative).
5. We must be grateful and kind to the cow (Negative).
6. Nazneen belongs to a small family (Negative).
7. They are honest and pious (Use 'not' to make it negative).
8. They are our friends (Negative).
9. He passed his early life in sorrows (Negative).
10. Everybody must be conscious of health (Negative).
11. All acid throwers should be punished (Negative).

Key to Exercise :

1. Tea is not an unpopular drink.
2. His wife Catherine does not hate gardening.
3. Most of the drivers of our country are not literate.
4. At first he treated nothing but animals.
5. We cannot but be grateful and kind to the cow.
6. Nazneen does not belong to a big family.
7. They are not dishonest and impious.
8. They are not our foes.
9. He did not pass his early life in happiness.
10. Nobody must be unconscious of health.
11. No acid throwers should go unpunished.

Assertive ★ Interrogative

Assertive থেকে Interrogative : সাধারণত Assertive Sentenceকে interrogative করার জন্য প্রদত্ত বাক্যের (প্রথম) auxiliary verb টি subject এর প– র্বে আনতে হবে। আর যদি auxiliary verb না থাকে তবে do/does/did অতিরিক্ত এনে subject এর প– র্বে বসাতে হবে এবং ম– ল verb টির base form হবে।

Example :

1. He is swimming in the pond. **(Interrogative)**
   Is he swimming in the pond?
2. He goes to school every day. **(Interrogative)**
   Does he go to school everyday?

   আবার Interrogative থেকে Assertive করতে হলে subject এর প– র্বের auxiliary verb টি পরে রাখতে হয়। তবে do/does/did থাকলে তা বাদ যায় এবং সে অনুযায়ী verb এর পরিবর্তন হয়।

1. Is he reading a book? (**Assertive**)
   He is reading a book.
2. Does he play football? (**Assertive**)
   He plays football.

   কিন্তু এভাবে পরিবর্তন করলে sentence এর অর্থ ঠিক থাকে না। যেহেতু Transformation of sentence এর ক্ষেত্রে অর্থ পরিবর্তন না করেই sentence এর structure পরিবর্তন করতে হয় তাই আমরা দুটি নিয়ম অনুসরণ করি।

(i) নির্দিষ্ট শব্দ পরিবর্তন
(ii) প্রশ্নানুযায়ী Assertive/Interrogative + Negative/ Affirmative

নির্দি□ শ□ পরিবর্তন

(i) Interrogative থেকে Assertive

1. Who + Affirmative verb যুক্ত interrogative sentence কে assertive করার জন্য None/No one/Nobody লিখতে হবে।
   Who believes a liar? (Assertive)
   Nobody believes a liar.
2. Who + Negative verb যুক্ত interrogative sentence কে assertive করার জন্য Everyone/Everybody বসাতে হবে এবং বাক্যটি affirmative হবে।
   Who does not like flowers? (Assertive)
   Everyone/Everybody likes flowers.

Assertive থেকে Interrogative :

ঠিক একইভাবে Assertive থেকে Interrogative করতে হলে None/ Nobody এর পরিবর্তে Who + affirmative verb বসবে এবং Everyone/ Everybody এর পরিবর্তে Who + negative verb বসবে।

1. Nobody cares him. (Interrogative)
   Who cares him?
2. Everybody loves him. (Interrogative)
   Who does not love him?

(ii) প্রশ্নানুযায়ী Assertive/Interrogative + Negative/ Affirmative

এক্ষেত্রে,

(a) Affirmative থাকলে Neg-Int. করতে হয় এবং Neg-Int. থাকলে Affir. করতে হয়।

(b) Neg. থাকলে Int. করতে হয় এবং Int. থাকলে Neg. করতে হয়।

নিচের উদাহরণগুলোর মধ্যে 2 ও 4 হ" ছ (a)-rule এর আওতাধীন এবং 1 ও 3 হ" ছ (b)-rule এর আওতাধীন।

1. He does not read attentively. (Interrogative)
   Does he read attentively?
2. The earth moves round the sun. (Interrogative)
   Doesn't the earth move round the sun?
3. Does he play regularly? (Assertive)
   He does not play regularly.
4. Doesn't she sing sweet? (Assertive)
   She sings sweet.

Exercise

Transform the following sentences as directed.
(নির্দেশনা অনুযায়ী নিচের বাক্যগুলো পরিবর্তন কর।)

01. Tea grows in plenty in Bangladesh (Interrogative).
02. Suddenly she woke up hearing a fearful cry (Interrogative).
03. There is no doubt that newspaper is a very essential thing (Interrogative).
04. They don't realize the high cost of living in Toronto(Interrogative).
05. I can never forget you (Interrogative).
06. Many of them left the Eidgah to meet their relatives (Interrogative).
07. They do nothing for the country (Interrogative).
08. Tree plantation programmes should be expanded to the remote corner of the country (Interrogative).
09. But books are always with us (Interrogative).
10. Patriotism is a very noble virtue (Interrogative).

Key to Exercise :

01. Doesn't tea grow in plenty in Bangladesh?

holycrossrajshahi.com

02. Didn't she suddenly wake up hearing a fearful cry?
03. Is there any doubt that newspaper is a very essential thing?
04. Do they realise the high cost of living in Toronto?
05. Can I ever forget you?
06. Didn't many of them leave the Eidgah to meet their relatives?
07. Do they do anything for the country?
08. Shouldn't tree plantation programmes be expanded to the remote corner of the country?
09. Aren't books always with us?
10. Isn't patriotism a very noble virtue?

Assertive ★ Exclamatory

Rule : Verb এর পরের অংশ + verb এর প– র্বের অংশ। very/ great থাকলে তা বাদ যাবে।

She looks very beautiful. (Exclamatory)

- How beautiful she looks! [How + adj/adv. + sub + verb]

She is a very nice girl. (Exclamatory)

- What a nice girl she is! [What a/an + noun phrase + sub + verb]

ল□ণীয় : adjective/adverb এর প– র্বে How বসে কিন্তু noun/noun phrase এর প– র্বে what বসে। অবশ্য What এর পরিবর্তে Howও বসানো যায় সেক্ষেত্রে article টি noun এর সাথে বসাতে হবে।

1. Ruplal runs very fast (Exclamatory)

- How fast Ruplal runs!
  adjective

2. Dido is a very interesting man.

- What an interesting man Dido is!
  Noun Phrase

3. How interesting a man Dido is!

Rule : "I wish" যুক্ত Assertive Sentence কে Exclamatory করার তিনটি নিয়ম রয়েছে।

(a) Subject এর পর were থাকলে I wish এর পরিবর্তে If বসে।

(b) Subject এর পর had থাকলে সেটি Sentence এর শুর" তে আসে এবং I wish বাদ যায়।

(c) Subject এর পর could থাকলে I wish এর পরিবর্তে would that বসে।

Examples :

1) I wish I were a bird.
Excl. : If I were a bird!
2) I wish I had a friend to support me.
Excl. : Had I friend to support me!
3) I wish I could be a cricketer.
Excl. : Would that I could be a cricketer!

Exercise

Transform the following sentences as directed.

1. Air pollution is very harmful for us (Exclamatory).
2. Cricket is very exciting (Exclamatory).
3. Really it is a very exciting game (Exclamatory).
4. The next few days were terrible (Exclamatory).
5. It looks very nice at sunset (Exclamatory).

Key to Exercise :

1. How harmful air pollution is for us!
2. How exciting cricket is!
3. What an exciting game it is!
4. How terrible the next few days were!
5. How nice it looks at sunset!

Exclamatory থেকে Assertive

Rule–1 :

Exclamatory Sentence-কে Assertive করতে হলে গঠন হবে :

(i) Sub. + verb + very + Adj. + ...
(ii) Sub. + verb + a very/ a great + adj. যেমন :

Exclamatory : What a fine bird it is!
Assertive : It is a very fine bird.
Exclamatory : What a fool he is!
Assertive : He is a great fool.
Exclamatory : How beautiful the sight is!
Assertive : The sight is very beautiful.

Note : যেসব Exclamatory Sentence-এ what a/an এর পর adj./adv. থাকে এবং Subject টি ব্যক্তিবাচক হয় তাদেরকে Assertive করার সময় সাধারণত great আনতে হয়।

Rule–2 :

Exclamatory Sentence-এ আনন্দস– চক কোনো শব্দ যেমন Hurrah, Wao ইত্যাদি থাকলে তাদের পরিবর্তে It is a matter of great joy that বসে। আবার, দুঃখবাচক কোনো শব্দ যেমন Alas, Fie Fie ইত্যাদি থাকলে It is a matter of great sorrow that বসে। তদ্র" প, বিস্ময়স– চক কোনো শব্দ থাকলে It is a matter of great wonder that বসে। যেমন–

(i) Excl. : Hurrah! We have won the game.
Ass. : It is a matter of great joy that we have won the game.
(ii) Excl. : Alas! I am ruined.
Ass. : It is a matter of great sorrow that I am ruined.

Exercise

Transform the following sentences as directed.

1. How enthusiastic the people look on this day! (Assertive).
2. What an idea of cricket Twenty 20 is! (Assertive).
3. How charming! (Assertive).
4. But how difficult it is to find an honest man! (Assertive).
5. How time does fly! (Assertive).

Key to Exercise :

1. The people look very enthusiastic on this day.
2. Twenty 20 cricket is a very good idea.
3. It is very charming.
4. But it is very difficult to find an honest man.
5. Time flies very fast.

Assertive থেকে Imperative

Rule–1 :

Subject যদি Second Person হয় তাহলে Assertive Sentence-কে Imperative করতে হলে প্রদত্ত Sentence-টির ম– ল Verb-এর Base form + প্রদত্ত verb-এর পরের অংশ। যেমন :

Assertive : You should do the work.
Imperative : Do the work.

Rule–2 :

Assertive Sentence টি না-বোধক হলে Imperative করার সময় do not অথবা don't + প্রদত্ত Sentence-এর ম– ল Verb-এর Present form হবে। যেমন :

Assertive : You do not go out.

holycrossrajshahi.com

Imperative : Do not go out.

Rule–3 :

Never যুক্ত বাক্যে never-এর সাথে ম– ল Verb-এর Present form + verb + বাক্যের বাকি অংশ। যেমন :

Assertive : You should never tell a lie.
Imperative : Never tell a lie.

Rule–4 :

Subject যদি first person অথবা third person হয় তাহলে Let-এর সাথে প্রদত্ত Sentence টির Objective form বসে এবং ম– ল Verb ও object-টি থাকে শেষে। যেমন :

Assertive : He plays cricket.
Imperative : Let him play cricket.

Transform the following sentences into Imperative.

1. We shall never tell a lie. 2. You ought to obey your parents. 3. He plays football. 4. We should go out. 5. She wants to do it.

Key to Exercise:

1. Let us never tell a lie.
2. Obey your parents.
3. Let him play football.
4. Let us go out.
5. Let her do it.

Imperative থেকে Assertive

Rule-1 :

Imperative Sentence কে Assertive করার সময় you উহ্য থাকে। কাজেই Subject 'You' কে ব্যবহার করতে হবে। কখনো কখনো sub. এর পর should বসে। যেমন :

Imperative : Read the book.
Assertive : You should read the book.
Imperative : Go away.
Assertive : You should go away.
Imperative : Stop copying.
Assertive : You should stop copying.
Imperative : Never tell a lie.
Assertive : You should never tell a lie.

Rule-2 :

Let যুক্ত Imperative Sentence কে Assertive করতে হলে নিচের নিয়মে করতে হয় :

Sub + Should + Verb + ...

(i) Let him go.
Ass : He should go.
(ii) Let them play football.
Ass : They should play football.

Assertive থেকে Optative

Rule :

Assertive থেকে Optative করার ক্ষেত্রে প্রদত্ত Sentence-টির প্রথমে may পরে Subject এবং অতঃপর ম– ল Verb বসে। কোনো Auxiliary Verb থাকলে তা উঠে যায়। যেমন :

Assertive : You will prosper in life.
Optative : May you prosper in life.
Assertive : Our president will live long.
Optative : May our president live long.

Exercise

Transform the following sentences into Optative.

1. God may bless you 2. You may prosper in life 3. God may grant you a long life. 4. You may have a prosperous journey. 5. Bangladesh may live long.

Key to Exercise :

1. May God bless you.
2. May you prosper in life.
3. May God grant you a long life.
4. May you have a prosperous journey.
5. May Bangladesh live long.

Practice

A. Transform the following sentences as directed.
(a) The beauty of Mita attracts everybody. (Interrogative)
(b) It shines the brightest of any star. (Positive)
(c) He is always late for the class. (Negative)
(d) No man could have done it before. (Interrogative)
(e) He is the best man for the job. (Comparative)

B. Transform the following sentences as directed.
(a) I wish to go there. (Exclamatory)
(b) Isn't the earth round? (Assertive)
(c) He has only a few books. (Negative)
(d) Nasima is one of the tallest girls in our class. (comparative)
(e) The Arabian Nights is the most popular of all stories. (Positive)

C. Transform the following sentences as directed.
(a) Hamlet is the best novel in English. (Comparative)
(b) Go there. (Negative)
(c) I rejoice that my friend is coming. (Exclamatory)
(d) She was not active. (Affirmative)
(e) Don't go out in the rain. (Assertive)

D. Transform the following sentences as directed.
(a) The airplane flies faster than birds. (Positive)
(b) Everyman likes a good student. (Negative)
(c) No one will deny that he is innocent. (Affirmative)
(d) I wish I had a friend to support me. (Exclamatory)
(e) His father is taller than he. (Positive)

E. Transform the following sentences as directed.
(a) You should allow him to do the work. (Imperative)
(b) I wish I were a king. (Exclamatory)
(c) There is no hope for me. (Interrogative)
(d) Apples are less delicious than mangoes. (Positive)
(e) Samina is better than any other girl in the class. (Superlative)

F. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.
(a) My watch has been stolen.
(b) Love the children.
(c) The cat killed the mouse.
(d) Let him sing a folk song.
(e) My pen has been lost.

G. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.
(a) The cup contains tea.
(b) You are requested not to smoke.
(c) She fans herself.
(d) He looks after the orphan.

holycrossrajshahi.com

(e) Change the voice.

H. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.

(a) I have lost my pen.
(b) Let me say a few words.
(c) Did they make a noise?
(d) Do away with it.
(e) The teacher made me do the sum.

I. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.

(a) Who has broken the glass?
(b) Rome was not built in a day.
(c) Mr Rahman teaches us English.
(d) Pluck me a flower.
(e) Honey tastes sweet.

J. Change the following sentences into active or passive form.

(a) Floods destroyed many houses.
(b) They are going to open halkhata.
(c) Tell him to go.
(d) Pluck me the flower.
(e) He was elected Premier.

K. Change the underlined sentences as directed in the brackets.

01. The name of our school is Ideal School and College.(a) It is one of the best schools in our country. (make it a positive sentence) (b) Only the meritorious students can get chance to study here. (make it negative sentence without changing meaning) (c) It is now double shifted. (make it interrogative) (d) The school is run very well. (make it active voice) (e) We must try to uphold its dignity (make it negative sentence using can not help). I like my school very much.

02. (a) Pahela Baishakh is the biggest festival for the people of Bangladesh. (Positive) (b) People wear their traditional dress on this day. (Passive) (c) People look very cheerful.(Negative) (d) There is nobody but attends a Baishakhi Mela. (Affirmative) (e) There is nothing unpleasant in a Baishakhi Mela. (Interrogative)

03. (a) Cuckoo is a seasonal bird. (Negative)
(b) It doesn't stay near the habitants. (Affirmative)
(c) It is very shy in nature. (Interrogative)
(d) We enjoy its sweet songs in the spring. (Imperative)
(e) How sweetly it sings to entertain us! (Assertive)

04. (a) Cricket is a very exciting game. (Exclamatory) (b) People of all ages enjoy the game. (Passive) (c) At present cricket is the most popular game in our country. (Comparative) (d) Cricket is enjoyed not only by the young but also by the old. (Affirmative) (e) Bangladesh is a test playing country but its standard is very low (Negative)

05. (a) A mobile phone is light to carry. (Interrogative)
(b) It is not expensive. (Affirmative)
(c) Only a wicked person uses it for evil purpose. (Passive)
(d) It is used for different purposes. (Active)
(e) No other thing is as useful as a mobile set. (Superlative)

Answers

A. (a) Doesn't the beauty of Mita attract everybody?
(b) No other star shines as bright as it.
(c) He is never punctual in the class.
(d) Could anyone have done it before?
(e) He is better than any other man for the job.

B. (a) Could I go there!
(b) The earth is round.
(c) He does not have many books.
(d) Nasima is taller than most other girls in our class.
(e) No other story is as popular as The Arabian Nights.

C. (a) Hamlet is better than any other novel in English.
(b) Don't go there.
(c) Hurrah! My friend is coming.
(d) She was inactive.
(e) You should not go out in the rain.

D. (a) Birds do not fly as fast as the airplane.
(b) No man dislikes a good student.
(c) Everybody will admit that he is innocent.
(d) Had I a friend to support me!
(e) He is not as tall as his father.

E. (a) Let him do the work.
(b) If I were a king!
(c) Is there any hope for me?
(d) Apples are not as delicious as mangoes.
(e) Samina is the best girl in the class.

F. (a) Somebody has stolen my watch.
(b) Let the children be loved.
(c) The mouse was killed by the cat.
(d) Let a folk song be sung by him.
(e) I have lost my pen.

G. (a) Tea is contained in the cup.
(b) Don't smoke, please.
(c) She is fanned by herself.
(d) The orphan are looked after by him.
(e) Let the voice be changed.

H. (a) My pen has been lost.
(b) Let a few words be said by me.
(c) Was a noise made by them?
(d) Let it be done away with.
(e) I was made to do the sum by the teacher.

I. (a) By whom has the glass been broken?
(b) The Romans did not build Rome in a day.
(c) We are taught English by Mr. Rahman/ English is taught us by Mr. Rahman.
(d) Let a flower be plucked for me.
(e) Honey is sweet to taste./ Honey is sweet when it is tasted./ Honey is tasted sweet.

J. (a) Many houses were destroyed by floods.
(b) Halkhata is going to be opened by them.
(c) Let him be told to go.
(d) Let the flower be plucked for me.
(e) We elected him Premier.

K.

01. (a) Very few schools in our country are as good as it.
(b) None but the meritorious students can get chance to study here.
(c) Isn't it now double shifted?
(d) The authority runs the school very well.

(e) We cannot but try to uphold its dignity.

02. (a) No other festival is as big as Pahela Baishakh for the people of Bangladesh.
(b) Traditional dresses are worn by people on this day.
(c) People do not look sad.
(d) Everybody attends a Baishakhi Mela.
(e) Is there anything unpleasant in a Baishakhi Mela?

03. (a) Cuckoo is not a bird lasting all the year round/Cuckoo is not an all-season bird.
(b) It stays far from the habitants.
(c) Isn't it very shy in nature?
(d) Let us enjoy its sweet songs in the spring.
(e) It sings very sweetly to entertain us.

04. (a) What an exciting game cricket is!
(b) The game is enjoyed by people of all ages.
(c) At present cricket is more popular than any other game in our country.
(d) Not only the young but also the old enjoy cricket.
(e) Bangladesh is a test playing country but its standard is not at all high.

05. (a) Isn't a mobile phone light to carry?
(b) It is cheap.
(c) It is used for evil purpose by a wicked person only.
(d) We use it for different purposes.
(e) A mobile set is the most useful thing.

Idioms and Phrases 22

পৃথিবীর প্রতিটি ভাষারই একটা নিজস্ব শব্দবিন্যাস ও ভাব প্রকাশের রীতি রয়েছে। এক ভাষার প্রকাশরীতি অন্য ভাষার প্রকাশরীতি হতে ভিন্ন। ইংরেজি ভাষায় দুই বা ততোধিক Word-এর সমন্বয়ে গঠিত শব্দগু" ছ বিশেষ বিশেষ অর্থ প্রকাশ করে থাকে। যেমন :

Cats and dogs (heavily, মুষলধারে)
Come to light (become known, প্রকাশিত হওয়া)
Far and wide (everywhere, সর্বত্র)
Hard and fast (rigid, ধরাবাঁধা)
In time (in proper time, ঠিক সময়ে)

এভাবে বিশেষ অর্থ প্রকাশক অসংখ্য শব্দগু" ছ ইংরেজি ভাষাতে রয়েছে। এগুলোকে Idioms (বাগ্‌বিধি বা বাগ্‌রীতি) বলা হয়।

শিক্ষার্থীদেরকে মনে রাখতে হবে যে উক্ত শব্দগু" ছগুলোর খেয়াল খুশিমত কোনো পরিবর্তন করা যায় না। এগুলোর অন্তর্গত a, an, the, at, in, by, with বা singular/plural-কে নিজের ই" ছামত কোনো পরিবর্তন করা যাবে না।

Idioms ইংরেজি ভাষাকে শুধু শক্তিশালীই করে না, ভাষাকে শ্র" তিমধুর করে। সংক্ষেপে, idioms ভাষার সৌন্দর্য বৃদ্ধি ও শক্তির পরিচায়ক। সুতরাং ইংরেজি ভাষাতে idioms-এর প্রয়োজনীয়তা অনস্বীকার্য। নিচে বহুল ব্যবহৃত idioms উদাহরণসহ দেয়া হলো :

A

A bed of roses (ফুলশয্যা)—Life is not a bed of roses.
A black sheep (নীচ বিশ্বাসঘাতক ব্যক্তি, কুলাঙ্গার)—He is a black sheep in the family.
A bone of contention (বিবাদের বিষয়)–Property might be a bone of contention.
A bolt from the blue (বিনা মেঘে বজ্রপাত)—Her dismissal came as a bolt from the blue.
A gift of the gab (বাকপটুতা)—His maiden speech proves that he has a gift of the gab.
A great deal of (প্রচুর)—He has a great deal of books for study.
A hard nut to crack (কঠিন সমস্যা)—Corruption is a hard nut to crack in Bangladesh.
A red letter day (স্মরণীয় দিন)—21st February is a red letter day in our history.
A slow coach (অলস ব্যক্তি)—We cannot depend on him because he is a slow coach.
Above all (সব কিছুর ঊর্ধ্বে/সর্বোপরি)—He is, above all, the guardian of the family.
All at once (অকস্মাৎ/আচমকা)—The girl slapped the boy all at once.
All in all (সর্বেসর্বা)—He is all in all in this office.
All on a sudden (হঠাৎ)—It happened all on a sudden.
Apple of one's eye (চোখের মণি/প্রিয় বস্তু)—Mehedi is an apple of his parents' eye.
At a loss (হতবুদ্ধি)—He is at a loss what to do.
At a time (একসাথে)—I can't take much food at a time.
At all (আদৌ)—I am not at all involved in the matter.
At all costs (যে কোনো ম– ল্যে)—He will do the job at all costs.
At last (অবশেষে)–At last, God took pity on the old sailor.
At random (নির্বিচারে)—We should not cut trees at random.
At stake (ঝুঁকির মধ্যে)—His life is at stake.

B

Bag and baggage (তল্পিতল্পাসহ)—He went away bag and baggage.
Bear in mind (মনে রাখা)—You should always bear in mind that idleness brings poverty.
Bed of roses (পুষ• শয্যা)—Life is not a bed of roses.
Bed of thorns (কণ্টকাকীর্ণ)—Life is a bed of thorns.
Beggar description (বর্ণনাতীত)—His sufferings beggar description.
Black and blue (নির্দয়ভাবে)—The thief was beaten black and blue.
Black and white (লিখিতভাবে)—She complained against me in black and white.
Blue blood (আভিজাত্য)—He is proud of his blue blood.
Bring to book (শাস্তি দেওয়া)—He was brought to book for his dishonesty.
Burning question (গুর" ত্বপূর্ণ বিষয়)—Population problem is a burnig question of the day.
By all means (সর্ব পন্থায়)—I will try to help you by all means.
By hook or by crook (যেমন করে হোক; ছলে বলে কৌশলে)—I will do it by hook or by crook.
By turns (পর্যায়ক্রমে)—Weal and woe come by turns.

C

Call in (কাউকে ডাকা)—Call in a doctor.
Call names (গালি দেয়া)—His cousin calls him names.
Catch sight of (দেখতে পাওয়া)—I caught sight of him in the market.
Cats and dogs (মুষলধারে)—It has been raining cats and dogs since morning.
Chicken hearted (দ– র্বল চিত্তের/ ভীর")—A chicken hearted man cannot do it.
Crying need (অতি জরুরি)—A dictionary is a crying need for a student.
Cut a good figure (পরীক্ষায় ভালো করা)—He cut a good figure in HSC Exam.

D

Dawn to dusk (সকাল হতে সন্ধ্যা)—The poor man works from dawn to dusk.
Day by day (দিনের পর দিন)—She is doing well in the exam day by day.
Due to (কারণে)—I could not come due to my illness.

E

Eat a humble pie (ক্ষমা ভিক্ষা চাওয়া)—You have to eat a humble pie for your misconduct.
End in smoke (নিষ্ফল হওয়া)—All his efforts ended in smoke.
Epoch-making (যুগান্তকারী)—Landing on the moon is an epoch making incident.
Every inch (পুরোপুরি)—I want every inch of the land.

F

Face to face (সরাসরি)—We talked face to face.
Fall a victim to (কোনো কিছুর শিকার হওয়া)—He fell a victim to her beauty.
Far and near/wide (সর্বত্র)—The fame of Dr. Yunus has spread far and near.
Flesh and blood (রক্ত মাংসের শরীর)–No flesh and blood can bear such an insult.
For ever (চিরতরে)—He left the country for ever.
French leave (অনুমতি ছাড়া ছুটি)—None should enjoy french leave.
From hand to mouth (দিন এনে দিন খাওয়া)—He lives from hand to mouth.

G

Gala day (উৎসব মুখর দিন)—Pahela Baishakh is a gala day in our culture.
Get by heart (মুখস্থ করা)—Get the poem by heart.
Get rid of (পরিত্রাণ)–I want to get rid of this problem.
Get up (উঠা)—We should get up early in the morning.
Golden age (স্বর্ণযুগ)—Elezabethan age was called the golden age of English literature.

H

Hale and hearty (সুস্থ)—I think you are hale and hearty.
Hanker after (কোনো কিছু /কারো জন্য লালায়িত হওয়া)—We should not hanker after wealth only.
Hard and fast (ধরাবাঁধা নিয়ম)—There are no hard and fast rules about it.
Hard nut to crack (অনমনীয় ব্যক্তি)—Don't try to convince him because he is a hard nut to crack.
Hot cake (খুব কাট্তি/খুব চাহিদা)—The novels of Humayun Ahmed are sold like a hot cake.
Hue and cry (হৈচৈ; শোরগোল)—Do not make a hue and cry.

I

In a body (একযোগে)—We went to the Manager in a body.
In a fix (হতবুদ্ধি)—I am in a fix, so I need your help.
In fact (বস্তুত/ আসলে)—In fact, I wanted to take rest.
In lieu of (পরিবর্তে)—I will take Physics in lieu of Mathematics.
In spite of (সত্ত্বেও)—In spite of his poverty, he is honest.
Ins and outs (খুঁটিনাটিসহ সব)—I know the ins and outs of that matter.

J

Jack of all trades (সবজান্তা শমসের)—You are a jack of all trades but master of none.

K

Keep pace with (তাল মিলিয়ে চলা)—He cannot keep pace with the new environment.
Know no bounds (সীমা না থাকা)—His sufferings knew no bounds.

L

Learn by heart (মুখস্থ করা)–Learn the poem by heart.
Leave no stone unturned (চেষ্টার ত্র" টি না করা)—I will leave no stone unturned to reach my target.
Lion's share (সিংহভাগ)—The investors of the company get the lion's share.
Look after (দেখাশুনা করা)—We should look after the patient carefully.
Look for (খোঁজা)—He is looking for a good job.
Lose heart (হতাশ হওয়া)—Don't lose heart.

M

Maiden speech (প্রথম বক্তৃতা)—My maiden speech was praiseworthy.
Make good (ক্ষতিপ– রণ দেয়া/ সফল হওয়া)— She promised to make good the damage.
Man of letters (পন্ডিত ব্যক্তি)—Dr. Muhammad Shahidullah was a man of letters.
Muster together (জড়ো হওয়া)—People mustered together in the meeting.

N

Nip in the bud (অঙ্কুরে বিনষ্ট করা)— My hope was nipped in the bud.
Null and void (আইনত বাতিল)— The election has been declared null and void.

O

Of course (অবশ্যই)—Of course, it was a matter of great sacrifice.
Of one's own accord (স্বে" ছায়)—He did the work of his own accord.
On account of (জন্য/ কারণে)— I could not come on account of my illness.
On behalf of (পক্ষে)— Our captain applied to the

principal on behalf of students.
On the sly (গোপনে)— He came to me on the sly.
On the spur of the moment (হঠাৎ উত্তেজনার বশে)—He showed his anger on the spur of the moment.
On the verge of (কোনো কিছুর সন্নিকটে/ কিনারায়)—He is now on the verge of ruin.
Open secret (সর্বজনবিদিত গোপন বিষয়)—It is an open secret that he takes bribe.

P

Part and parcel (অবিে" ছদ্য অংশ)— A library is a part and parcel of a school.
Play truant (নিয়মিতভাবে স্কুল পালানো)—Nazrul Islam played truant.
Put on (পরিধান করা)—The girl has put on her best clothes.
Put up with (সহ্য করা)—He could not put up with such an insult.

R

Rainy day (দুঃসময়)—We should save money for rainy day.
Red handed– (হাতে নাতে) The police caught the thief red handed.
Round the clock (দিনরাত)— The medicine corner is open round the clock.

S

Safe and sound (নিরাপদে)—We reached home safe and sound.
Sine die (অনির্দিষ্ট কালের জন্য)—Our college is closed sine die.
Skim through (চোখ বুলিয়ে যাওয়া)—Would you skim through the report?
Slow coach (অলস ব্যক্তি)—She was not a slow coach.

T

Take care of (যত্ন নেওয়া)—Take care of that helpless orphan child.
Take one to task (কাউকে তিরস্কার করা)—The teacher took the student to task.
Take pity on (কর" ণা করা)–At last, God took pity on him.
Tall talk (বড় কথা)—He is in the habit of tall talk.
Tell upon (প্রভাবিত করা /ক্ষতি করা)—Smoking must tell upon your health.
Tough cookie (সহজে প্রভাবিত হয় না এমন ব্যক্তি)— She is a tough cookie.
Turn a deaf ear (কান না দেয়া/ কর্ণপাত না করা)—You should not turn a deaf ear to your parents.

U

Up and doing (তৎপর হওয়া)—Let's be up and doing to reach the goal.
Up and down (সামনে পিছনে)— He kept walking up and down.
Ups and downs (উত্থান-পতন)— There are ups and downs in every man's life.

W

Weal and woe (সুখ-দুঃখ)–Weal and woe come by turns.

Y

Yellow dog (হীন ব্যক্তি)—In the factory there are many yellow dogs.

Z

Zero hour (গুর" ত্বপুর্ণ সময় যখন কোনো পরিকল্পনা বা আক্রমণ শুর" করা হয়)–The armies are at zero hour to invade the city.

Practice

01. Complete the following sentences with the idioms and phrases from the list given in the box.

on the spur of the moment (মুহ– র্তের উত্তেজনায়)
in black and white (লিখিতভাবে)
nip in the bud (অংকুরে বিনষ্ট করা)
fight shy of (এড়িয়ে চলা)
bone of contention (বিবাদের বিষয়)
a slow coach (অলস ব্যক্তি)
epoch making (ইতিহাস সৃষ্টিকারী/যুগান্ত@কারী)

(a) Don't try to — me.
(b) The piece of land is the — between two brothers.
(c) Landing on the moon is an — event.
(d) He gave his consent — .
(e) — like you can never prosper in life.

02. Complete the following sentences with the idioms and phrases from the list given in the box.

beggar description (অবর্ণনীয়)	in a fix (হতবুদ্ধি)
nip in the bud (অংকুরে বিনষ্ট করা)	crying need (জর" ুরি প্রয়োজন)
by dint of (বলে/প্রভাবে)	all on a sudden (হঠাৎ)
in store for (কপালে/ভাগ্যে)	

(a) The sufferings of cyclone affected people —.
(b) Learning English is a — for everybody.
(c) Only Allah knows what is — me.
(d) He stood first — hard labour.
(e) — it began to rain.

03. Complete the following sentences with the idioms and phrases from the list given in the box.

good at (দক্ষ)	part and parcel (অবিে" ছদ্য অংশ)
call in (ডাকা/আহবান করা)	as though (যেন)
beggar description (অবর্ণনীয়)	die by (দুর্ঘটনায় মারা যাওয়া)
come off (অনুষ্ঠিত হওয়া)	

(a) Please — a doctor.
(b) He is — Mathematics.
(c) My father — accident yesterday.
(d) Physical exercise is the — of education.
(e) He speaks — he were a mad.

04. Complete the following sentences with the idioms and phrases from the list given in the box.

black and white	come round (সুস্থ হওয়া)

(লিখিতভাবে)	
in a body (একত্রে)	in the guise of (ছদ্মবেশে)
go through (ভালোভাবে পড়া)	hard and fast (ধরাবাঁধা)

(a) He fell ill but — soon.
(b) The students came to the Headmaster — .
(c) He came — a beggar.
(d) There is no — rule in this case.
(e) He never — his text book.

05. Complete the following sentences with the idioms and phrases from the list given in the box.

come to term (চুক্তি করা)	end in smoke (ব্যর্থ হওয়া)	on the verge (দ্বারপ্রান্তে)	hard and fast (ধরাবাঁধা)
hold good (প্রযোজ্য)	on the wane (কমতি)	out of date (অপ্রচলিত)	

(a) This example — in your case.
(b) His popularity is — .
(c) He is — of ruin.
(d) They — after long discussion.
(e) All his attempts — .

Answers

01. (a) fight shy of (b) bone of contention (c) epoch making (d) in black and white (e) A slow coach
02. (a) beggar description (b) crying need (c) in store for (d) by dint of (e) All on a sudden
03. (a) call in (b) good at (c) died by (d) part and parcel (e) as though
04. (a) came round (b) in a body (c) in the guise of (d) hard and fast (e) goes through
05. (a) holds good (b) on the wane (c) on the verge (d) come to term (e) ended in smoke.

Narration 23

কারো বক্তব্য, বিশ্বাস বা ধ্যান-ধারণা অন্যের কাছে আমরা দুই ভাবে উপস্থাপন করতে পারি :

১. **অবিকল সেই ভাষায় :** এক্ষেত্রে কোনো কথাকে পরিবর্তন না করে তাকে Inverted Comma বা উদ্ধৃতি চিহ্নের (“ ”) মধ্যে রাখা। একে বলা হয় Direct Speech বা Direct Narration।

Example : Simon said to me, "I really enjoyed the meal last night."

এখন, Direct Narration related কয়েকটি term লক্ষ কর।

- Reported speech (RS) : Inverted comma এর ভিতরের অংশকে Reported speech বলে। উপরের বাক্যে "I really enjoyed the meal last night" হ” ছ R.S.
- Speaker : Reported speech যে উপস্থাপন করে তাকে Speaker বলে। এটা inverted comma এর বাহিরে থাকে। উপরের বাক্যে Simon হ” ছ speaker.
- Reporting verb (RV) : Speaker যে verb টি ব্যবহার করে তাকে Reporting verb বলে। উপরের বাক্যে Said হ” ছ R.V.
- Listener (Person spoken to) : Speaker যার কাছে reported speech টি উপস্থাপন করে তাকে listener বলে। উপরের বাক্যে I হ” ছ Listener.

২. **অন্যের ভাষায় :** এক্ষেত্রে বক্তার নিজের কথা হুবহু উদ্ধৃত না করে তার বক্তব্য connector/ linker যোগে অন্যের ভাষায় প্রকাশ করা হয়। একে বলা হয় Indirect Speech বা Indirect Narration।

Example : Simon told me that he really had enjoyed the meal the previous night.

উদাহরণ দুটি লক্ষ করলে আমরা নিম্নোক্ত পরিবর্তন পাই:

1. **Person :** I পরিবর্তিত হয়ে he হয়েছে।
2. **Tense :** Past Simple পরিবর্তিত হয়ে Past Perfect হয়েছে। (enjoyed → had enjoyed)
3. **Here & now words:** last night পরিবর্তিত হয়ে the previous night হয়েছে।
4. **Connector & reporting verb:** একটি connector “that” ব্যবহার করা হয়েছে এবং Inverted Comma বাদ দেয়া হয়েছে। Reporting verb ‘said’ পরিবর্তিত হয়ে told হয়েছে।

এখন, নিম্নে এই পরিবর্তন সম• র্কিত নিয়ম দেয়া হল:

Person পরিবর্তনের নিয়ম :

Rule–1 :

Reported Speech এর অন্তর্গত First Person সর্বদা Speaker অনুযায়ী পরিবর্তিত হয়। যেমন :

Direct : He said to me, " I have done my duty." (এখানে Speaker হল He; এবং listener হল me)

Indirect : He said to me that he had done his duty. (1st person I ও my এর পরিবর্তে he ও his বসানো হয়েছে।)

Rule–2 :

Reported Speech এর অন্তর্গত Second Person সর্বদা listener অনুযায়ী পরিবর্তিত হয়। যেমন-

Direct : He said to me, "You have done your duty. (এখানে Speaker হল He; এবং listener হল me)

Indirect : He said to me that I had done my duty.

holycrossrajshahi.com

(2nd person you ও your এর পরিবর্তে I ও my বসানো হয়েছে।

Rule–3 :

Reported Speech এর অন্তর্গত third person এর কোনো পরিবর্তন হয় না। যেমন :

Direct : I said to you, "He had done his duty." (এখানে Speaker হল I; এবং listener হল you)

Indirect : I said to you that he had done his duty.

Rule–4 :

We এর মাঝে যদি Speaker, listener অন্তর্ভুক্ত থাকে বা We দ্বারা যদি মানব জাতি বুঝায় তবে we পরিবর্তন হবে না।

Direct : He said to me, "We should say our prayer every day." (এখানে we এর দ্বারা he ও me কে বুঝায়।)

Indirect : He said that we should say our prayer every day.

Direct : The teacher said," We must die one day."

Indirect : The teacher said that we must die one day.

Person এর বিভিন্ন রূপ :

Person	Subject form	Object form	Possessive form
1st	I	me	my
	We	us	our
2nd	you	you	your
3rd	He, she, it	him, her, it	his, her, its
	they	them	their

Exercise with Answer

A. Fill in the blanks in the reported speech with the correct words.

1. Father said to me, "You can use my car."
⇒ Father told me that I could use his car.

2. They said to me, "You are responsible for your fault."
⇒ They told me that I was responsible for my fault.
They said to her, "You are responsible for your fault."
⇒ They told her that she was responsible for her fault.
They said to him, "You are responsible for your fault."
⇒ They told him that he was responsible for his fault.
They said to us, "You are responsible for your fault."
⇒ They told us that we were responsible for our fault.

3. He said, "I can do my work myself."
⇒ He said that he could do his work himself.
She said, "I can do my work myself."
⇒ She said that she could do her work herself.
I said, "I can do my work myself."
⇒ I said that I could do my work myself.
You said, "I can do my work myself."
⇒ You said that you could do your work yourself.

4. He said to me, "Your behavior irritates me."
⇒ He told me that my behaviour irritated him.
She said to us,"Your behavior irritates me."
⇒ She told us that our behaviour irritated her.
I said to you,"Your behavior irritates me."
⇒ I told you that your behaviour irritated me.
You said to me,"Your behavior irritates me."
⇒ You told me that my behaviour irritated you.

5. She said to us, "You can tell him thatI won't help them."
She told us that we could tell him that she wouldn't help them.

Tense পরিবর্তনের নিয়ম :

Rule–1 :

(a) Reporting Verb Present Tense বা Future Tense হলে Reported Speech এর verb এর Tense এর কোনো পরিবর্তন হয় না। কেবল Person পরিবর্তন হয়।

Direct : He says, "I am ill"
present present
Indirect : He says that he is ill.
present

Direct : Shiplo will say, "He writes a letter."
Future
Indirect : Shiplo will say that he writes a letter.
present

Rule–2 :

(b) Reporting verb টি Past Tense হলে Reported Speech এর Verb পরিবর্তিত হয়ে Corresponding Past Tense (অনুরূপ Past Tense) হয়।

১ম Verb টি Present থাকলে তা Past হবে

(i)	**Present** Indefinite: He said, "I write a letter."	**Past** Indefinite: He said that he wrote a letter.
(ii)	**Present** Continuous: He said, "I am writing a letter."	**Past** Continuous: He said that he was writing a letter.
(iii)	**Present** Perfect: He said, "I have seen John recently."	**Past** Perfect: He said that he had seen John recently.
(iv)	**Present** Perfect Continuous: He said, "I have been writing a letter."	**Past** Perfect Continuous: He said that he had been writing a letter.
(v)	Shall/will: They said, "The exam will be difficult."	Would: They said that the exam would be difficult.
(vi)	Can: He said, "I can fly."	Could: He said that he could fly.
(vii)	May: They said, "We may come back early."	Might: They said that they might come back early.

১ম Verb টি Past থাকলে তা Past Perfect হবে

(viii) **Past** Indefinite: He said, "I came by bus."	**Past Perfect**: He said that he had come by bus.
(ix) **Past** Continuous: He said, "I was writing a letter."	**Past Perfect** Continuous: He said that he had been writing a letter.

Conditional ও Past Perfect পরিবর্তন হয় না

(x) Would, could, should, might, must, ought They said, "It would be nice if we could meet"	Unchanged They said that it would be nice if they could meet.
(xi) Past Perfect She said, "I had given up hope."	Unchanged She said that she had given up hope.

Rule–3 :

Reporting verb past tense হলেও Reported Speech কোনো Universal truth (চিরন্ত্রন সত্য) or habitual fact (অভ্যাসগত কর্ম) প্রকাশ করলে verb এর কোনো পরিবর্তন হয় না।

Direct : He said, "The earth moves round the sun."
Indirect : He said that the earth moves round the sun.

Exercise

1. "I know the truth."
He said that he knew the truth.
He says that he knows the truth.

2. Rani: I was absent.
Rani is saying that she was absent.
Rani said that she had been absent.

3. The boys: We went home early.
The boys will say that they will go home early.
The boys had said that they had gone home early.

4. "I will do what I say."
She told me that she would do what she said .
She tells me that she will do what she says.

5. "We didn't meet her."
They said that they had not met her.
They will say that they will meet her.

6. Mohan: She helps me a lot.
Mohan will say she will help him a lot. Mohan was saying that she would help him a lot.

7. "I am sure you knew it."
She told me that she was sure I had known it.
She tells me that she is sure I know it.
She will tell me that she will be sure I will know it.

Here & Now words পরিবর্তনের নিয়ম :

নৈকট্যস– চক শব্দগুলো Indirect Speech এ পরিবতির্ত হয়ে দ– রত্বস– চক শব্দে পরিণত হয়। যেমন-

'এই/আজ' প্রকাশক শব্দের পরিবর্তে 'ঐ' অর্থাৎ 'that' বসবে।

Direct	Indirect
This + সময় প্রকাশক শব্দ: He said, "He is coming this week."	That + সময় প্রকাশক শব্দ: He said that he was coming that week.
Today	That day

'গত' প্রকাশক শব্দের পরিবর্তে the previous বসবে।

Yesterday	the previous day
Last week/ year etc.	The previous week/ year etc.

'আগামী' প্রকাশক শব্দের পরিবর্তে the following বসবে।

Tomorrow	the following day
Next week/ year etc.	The following week/ year etc.

অন্যান্য

This/ that/ these + noun He said, "I have bought this shirt for my father."	The + noun He said that he had bought the shirt for his father.
This/ these (pronoun হলে) He said, "We will discuss this tomorrow."	It, they, them He said that they would discuss it the next day.
Here	There
Come	Go
Now	Then
Ago	Before

Exercise with Answer

1. He said, "I'm taking rest now."

He said that he was taking rest then .
He will say that he will be taking rest then.

2. "I will go either tomorrow or next Saturday."
She says that she will go either tomorrow or next Saturday.
She said that she would go either tomorrow or next Saturday.

3. Ganesh: I can easily do it this time.
Ganesh was saying that he could easily do it that time. Ganesh will say that he could easily do it that time.

4. My friend: You are going to the cinema tomorrow.
My friend told me that I was going to the cinema the next day.
My friend tells me that I am going to the cinema the next day.

Connector ও Reporting Verb ব্যবহারের নিয়ম

Assertive sentence

Speaker + say/said + Inverted comma উঠে গিয়ে Conjunction "that" বসে + subject + verb + Ext.

Or,

Speaker + tell/told + listener + Inverted comma উঠে গিয়ে Conjunction "that" বসে + subject + verb + Ext.

উল্লেখ থাকে যে :

(i) Say/ think verb-এর পর that conjunction উহ্য থাকে। (Michael Swan)

(ii) Tell এর পর অবশ্যই একটি object বসাতে হয় কিন্তু Say এর পর object বসাতে হয় না।

1. He said to me "You should behave yourself."
He told me that I should behave myself.
2. Kamal said, "I am sorry."
Kamal said that he was sorry.
3. Karim said, "I am asking Rahim to lend me his pen."
Karim said that he (K) was asking Rahim to lend him (K) his (R) pen.
4. He said, "My pen has run out."
He said that his pen had run out.
5. Sejan said, "I can't get up early in the morning."
Sejan said that he could not get up early in the morning

Interrogative Sentence

☑ *Reported Speech-টি Auxiliary verb দিয়ে শুরু" হলে:*

Speaker + ask/inquire of +Listener + if/ whether + subject + verb + বাকী অংশ।

Direct : The old man said to the maid, "Can you give me some food?
Indirect : The old man asked the maid if she could give him some food.
Direct : He said to me, "Will you return the book to me today?"
Indirect : He asked me if I would return the book to him that day.

☑ *কিন্তু Reported Speech-টি wh-word (যেমন who, whom, whose, what, which ইত্যাদি) দ্বারা আরম্ভ হলে :*

Speaker + ask/inquire of +Listener + wh-word + subject + verb + বাকী অংশ।

Direct : The teacher said to Kamal, "Why are you talking in the class?
Indirect : The teacher asked Kamal why he was talking in the class.
Direct : Sawan said to Sejan, "Why are you late for school everyday?"
Indirect : Sawan asked Sejan why he was late for school everyday.

Exercise with Answer

1. The maid said to the old man, "Why do you beg?"
The maid asked the old man why he begged.
2. She said to him, "Can't you work?"
She asked him if he could not work.
3. My friend said to me, "Why are you sitting alone here?"
My friend asked me why I was sitting alone there.
4. Zaman said to me, "Have you finished reading the book I gave you yesterday?"
Zaman asked me if I had finished reading the book he had given me the previous day.
5. "Will you return the book to me today?" he asked me.
He asked me if I would return the book to him that day.

Imperative Sentence

☑ ***Speaker + request /order/advise/tell/ ask +Listener + *to/not to/never to +Reported speech এর মল verb থেকে শেষ পর্যন্ত বসে।***

do not দিয়ে শুর'হয় তবে not to বসে এবং never থাকলে never to বসে। অনুরোধ বুঝালে request, নির্দেশ বুঝালে order, উপদেশ বুঝালে advise, Let me/him/them থাকলে ask; অন্যক্ষেত্রে tell বসে।

Direct : He said to me, "Please give me a glass of water."
Indirect : He requested me to give him a glass of water.
Direct : The teacher said to the student, "Always speak the truth."
Indirect : The teacher advised the student to speak the truth always.
Direct : I said to mother, "Let him come with us."
Indirect : I asked my mother to let him come with us.
Direct : The teacher said to the student, "Never tell a lie."
Indirect : The teacher advised the student never to tell a lie.
Direct : He said to me, "Don't smoke."
Indirect : He told me not to smoke.

Imperative Sentence (Let us/Let's)

☑ ***Speaker + suggested +(Listener) + Reported speech এর মূল verb-এর ing করে শেষ পর্যন্ত বসে।***

Direct : He said to me, "Let us go out for a walk."
Indirect : He suggested me going out for a walk.

Exercise with Answer

1. The teacher said to me, "Be attentive and listen to my lecture."
   The teacher advised me to be attentive and listen to his lecture.
2. He said to me, "Let us go for a walk in the open field."
   He suggested me going for a walk in the open field.
3. I said to him "Leave me alone",.
   I told him to leave me alone.
4. The teacher said to her, "Come to my room."
   The teacher told her to go to his room
5. He said to the dervishes "Hold your tongue!"
   He ordered the dervishes to hold their tongues.
6. She told me, "Take your hat off."
   She told/ordered me to take my hat off.

Optative Sentence

☑ ***Speaker + wished বা prayed বসে + that + Subject + might + মূল verb থেকে শেষ পর্যন্ত অংশ।***

Direct : Father said to me, "May God bless you."
Indirect : Father wished/prayed that God might bless me.
Direct : We said, "Long live our president."
Indirect : We wished that our president might live long.

Note : Allah/God থাকলে Pray ব্যবহার করা শ্রেয়। অন্যক্ষেত্রে wish ব্যবহার করা শ্রেয়।

Change the form of Speech:

1. Mother said to me, "May you live long."
2. Father said to his son, "May you pass the examination."
3. "May Allah help you," she said.
4. They said, "Long live our president."
5. The teacher said to the student, "May you come round soon."

Exclamatory Sentence

☑ ***Speaker + exclaimed + that বসে + Subject + verb + how/ what এর পরিবর্তে very/ great + বাকী অংশ।***

Direct : The man said, "How fine the bird is!"
Indirect : The man exclaimed that the bird was very fine.

NB: Reported Speech How or What সরা□র"না হলে very/great বসাতে হয় না।

Direct : He said, "Alas! I am undone."
Indirect : He exclaimed with sorrow that he was undone.

☑ ***যদি subject ও verb না থাকে তবে subject ও verb হিসাবে it was/he was অতিরিক্ত লিখতে হবে।***

Direct : He said, "What a pity!"
Indirect : He exclaimed that it was a great pity.

NB: Noun এর পূর্বে great এবং adjective/adverb এর পূর্বে very বসে।

Exercise for Practice

1. The man said to the boy, "How silly you are!"
2. I say to her, "What a nice girl you are!"
3. He said to me, "How beautiful she is!"
4. He has said to me, "How nice the weather is!"
5. He said, "What a cheering report!"

Answers :

1. The man exclaimed that the boy was very silly.
2. I exclaim that she is a very nice girl.
3. He exclaimed that she was very beautiful.
4. He has exclaimed that the weather is very nice.
5. He exclaimed that it was a cheering report.

Special Rules

Rule–1 :

কোনো ভুলের কারণে sorry/ I am sorry এসব থাকলে এর পরিবর্তে Speaker + apologized হবে।

Direct : 'Sorry, sir.' said the student.
Indirect : The student apologized.

Rule–2 :

Exclamatory sentence-এ অনেক সময় exclamatory word (ah, bravo, ugh, shit, wow, alas) ইত্যাদি থাকে সেক্ষেত্রে বক্তার tone অনুসারে পরিবর্তন করতে হবে।

ah — with contentment/ discomfort/ disgust
bravo — with approval/ admiration/ encouraging
ugh — with disgust/ strain
shit — with disgust/ strain
wow — with surprise/ wonder/ admiration/ pleasure
alas — with sorrow/ pity

Direct : "Wow! What a beautiful sight!" said he.
Indirect : He exclaimed with wonder that it was a very beautiful sight.

Rule–3 :

Reported Speech- এ শুধু "Yes" বা "No" থাকলে speaker + replied + in the negative/ affirmative.

Direct : "No, "said Mitu.
Indirect : Mitu replied in the negative.

Rule–4 :

Direct Speech এ "Sir" থাকলে Indirect Speech এ speaker এর পর "Sir" এর পরিবর্তে respectfully/ politely ব্যবহার করতে হয়।

Kamal said, "Sir, I am sorry."
Kamal respectfully said that he was sorry.

Rule–5 :

Direct Speech- এ যদি কাউকে address করা হয় তবে তা দুভাবে indirect-এ পরিবর্তন করা যায় :

holycrossrajshahi.com

(i) যদি addressing-টি true হয় তবে তা reporting verb-এর object করতে হয়।

Direct : 'Let him come with us, mother.' I said.

Indirect : I asked my mother to let him come with us.

(ii) যদি addressing-টি true না হয় তবে Addressing as + সম্বোধন দিয়ে শুর" করতে হয়।

Direct : "Are you hungry, friends?" said the shrewd (চতুর) king.

Indirect : Addressing them as friends, the shrewd king asked if they were hungry.

Rule–6 :

Direct Speech এ by Allah, by Jove, by God, by my life ইত্যাদি থাকলে Swearing by Allah/Jove/God ইত্যাদি ব্যবহার করতে হয়।

Direct : "By Allah" "he said, "I will not leave this house.

Indirect : Swearing by Allah, he said that he would not leave that house.

Rule–7 :

নিম্নের ছক অনুসারেও অনেক সময় direct থেকে indirect করতে হয়।

Direct	***Indirect***
(i) Good Morning/Good Evening/Good night / Happy Christmas : **Direct :** I said to him, "Good morning."	Speaker + wished + listener + good evening/good night/good morning/ a happy Christmas/ বসে। **Indirect :** I wished him good morning.
(ii) Thank You/ Curse the fog/ congratulations/ welcome : **Direct :** He said to me, "Thank you."	Speaker + thanked/ cursed/ congratulated/ welcomed + listener (শ্রোতা) বসে। **Indirect :** He thanked me.
(iii) Good bye : **Direct :** I said to him, "Good bye."	Speaker + bade + good bye বসে। **Indirect :** I bade him good bye.
(iv) Liar/ You a liar/ slow coach/ humourist: **Direct :** He said to me, " You liar."	Speaker + called + listener + a liar/ slow coach/ humourist **Indirect :** He called me a liar

Practice



- **Change the narration of the following sentences**

01. (a) Saima said, "I shall make a good result in this exam."
(b) The man said, "Friends, please help me."
(c) Nazmeen said to her teacher, "Would you solve my problem?"
(d) Lina said to Eva, "What do you mean?"
(e) Limina said, "My mother reads the Holy Quran every morning."

02. (a) Rafiq said to Nilu, "When will you return to me?"
(b) Father said to his son, "Do not waste your time."
(c) Lipi said, "I shall come to meet you tomorrow."
(d) I said to Saima, "Did you finish your homework?"
(e) Mezbah said, "I study regularly now."

03. (a) People said, "We have been suffering from load-shedding for these last two months."
(b) Mamun said to Palash, "Where do you read?"
(c) Mizan says, "You did not help me."
(d) Father said to me, "Do not mix with bad boys."
(e) They said to me, "Have you paid the telephone bill?"

04. (a) Sajib said to me, "May I come in?"
(b) Humayun said, "I am reading a book now."
(c) Ripon said, "Leave the campus at once."
(d) Noman said to me, "Can you help me?"
(e) Momin said to Amir, "I do not like you now."

05. (a) Ramisha said to Rifat, "Who are you? What do you want?"
(b) My father said to me, "We are going there tomorrow."
(c) He said to me, "Let me come in."
(d) I said to Limina, "Do you know me?"
(e) Arian said, "I love reading novels."

06. (a) Soha said to Doha, "Please give me a pen."
(b) Mother said to her son, "Where are you going?"
(c) Teacher said to his students, "Always speaks the truth."
(d) Sakib said to Rakib, "Let's play cricket."
(e) Shayon said to Sakib, "Can you help me?"

07. (a) They said, "You are responsible for your fault."
(b) He says to me, "Tomorrow my mother will cook biryani."
(c) You say, "I am busy in playing."
(d) Teacher said to him, "Which part of this book have you read?"
(e) Jamal said to Rahim, "Meet me in the afternoon."

08. (a) Mitu said, "No, I cannot go there now."

holycrossrajshahi.com

(b) I said to him, "Sir, would you please tell us something about you?"
(c) I said to him, "What things have made you angry?"
(d) The man said, "Friends, work unitedly against terrorism."
(e) Mother said to me, "I wanted to talk to you."

09. (a) I said, "Let him come with me."
(b) The man said to the boy, "How pathetic your story is!"
(c) He said, "What a cheering report!"
(d) He said to us, "Never dishonour an old man."
(e) They said to me, "We had been waiting there for 3 hours."

10. (a) He said, "Thank you."
(b) Raihan said, "Sir, I was very scared to see you there."
(c) Eva said, "The earth moves round the sun."
(d) Rashed said to him, "I will meet you tomorrow."
(e) The man said to me, "When will you be able to help me?

Answers

01. (a) Saima said that she would make a good result in that exam.
(b) Addressing them as friend the man requested them to help him.
(c) Nazmeen asked her teacher if he would solve her problem.
(d) Lina asked Eva what she (E) meant.
(e) Limina said that her mother reads the holy Quran every morning.

02. (a) Rafiq asked Nilu when she would return to him.
(b) Father advised his son not to waste his time.
(c) Lipi said that she would go to meet you the next day/the following day.
(d) I asked Saima if she had finished her homework.
(e) Mejbah said that he studied regularly then.

03. (a) People said that they had been suffering from load-shedding for those previous two months.
(b) Mamun asked Palash where he (P) read.
(c) Mizan says that I did not help him.
(d) Father advised me not to mix with the bad boys.
(e) They asked me if I had paid the telephone bill.

04. (a) Sajib asked me if he might go in.
(b) Humayun said that he was reading a book then.
(c) Ripon ordered to leave the campus at once.
(d) Noman asked me if I could help him.
(e) Momin said to Amir that he (M) did not like him (A) then.

05. (a) Ramisha asked Rifat who he (Ri) was and what he wanted.
(b) My father said to me that we were going there the following day.
(c) He proposed me that he should come in.
(d) I asked Limina if she knew me.
(e) Arian said that he loved reading novels.

06. (a) Soha requested Doha to give her a pen.
(b) Mother asked her son where he was going.
(c) Teacher advised his students always to speak the truth.
(d) Sakib proposed Rakib to play cricket.
(e) Shayon asked Sakib if he could help her.

07. (a) They said that I was responsible for my fault.
(b) He says to me that his mother will cook biryani the following day.
(c) You say that you are busy in playing.
(d) Teacher asked him which part of that book he had read.
(e) Jamal requested Rahim to meet him (J) in the afternoon.

08. (a) Mitu replied in the negative and said that she could not go there then.
(b) I respectfully asked him if he would tell us something about him.
(c) I asked him what things had made him angry.
(d) Addressing them as friend the man advised them to work unitedly against terrorism.
(e) Mother said to me that she had wanted to talk to me.

09. (a) I asked to let him come with me.
(b) The man regretted that the story of the boy was very pathetic.
(c) He exclaimed with joy that it was a very cheering report.
(d) He forbade us to dishonour an old man.
(e) They said to me that they had been waiting there for 3 hours.

10. (a) He thanked me.
(b) Raihan respectfully said that he had been very scared to see him there.
(c) Eva said that the earth moves round the sun.
(d) Rashed said to him that he (R) would meet him the following day.
(e) The man asked me when I would be able to

help him.